

THE

Relative Duties

OF

Parents and Children, Husbands and Wives, Masters and Servants;

Confider'd in SIXTEEN

Practical Discourses:

WITH

THREE SERMONS

Upon the CASE of

SELF-MURTHER.

By WILLIAM FLEETWOOD, D. D. (Now Lord Bishop of ELT.)

The Third Edition.

Necessary for all Families.

LONDON:

Printed for E.Bell, J. Darby. A. Bettesworth, F. Fayram, J. Pemberton, J. Hooke, C. Rivington, F. Clay, J. Batley, and E. Symon. Moccaxii.

S

H bu you the

la

mi

as



BRIGHTER SERRICORS

9 H

20 -11

TO THE

INHABITANTS

OFTHE

UNITED PARISHES

OF

St. Austin, and St. Faith.

My GOOD FRIENDS

ence of your kind Acceptance of my Labours with you, in the House of God, I have no cause to doubt but some of them will be also acceptable to, you at your private Homes: And, of them, I have chosen such as I believed might be of the most spreading and most lasting Advantage, rather than such as might, possibly, please some People better; as being very desirous of having my Relation,

tion, and Affection to you, recommended to your Minds, in the most useful Manner, whenever God should please to part us from each other.

The Design of Christianity is to make People happy in this World, as well as in another: And the Way it takes to do this, is to make them good and virtuous whilst they live, by the Discharge of, all the Relations they stand in to each other, whether Natural, Civil, or Contracted; i. e. by performing their Duty to their Neighbour. And therefore, if I can help to make you good Relations, you will, I know, be so far good Christians. But of this you will see enough in the following Discourses.

There is, indeed, no want of Printed Sermons in the World, abundance of very learned and useful ones being daily put out: So that I do not pretend to supply any Defect of this Nature, or to correct

rect the Mistakes of any. But I use the Liberty I have in common with other Writers, and give you some of mine among the rest. And if I say, I believe you will be something readier to read mine, than those of others, you know (as I said above) the Relation I have long had to you, will somewhat justify such Expecta-tion, and will a little excuse me, should I be mistaken. And there is, moreover, something in Variety that is very inviting, which may tempt others to read these Discourses as well as you; and I am very sure that whoever reads them, will be no Loser by it, and should be very blameable in putting them out, if I did not think so. And that is one great Use that we may make of People's Levity, or Want of Judgment, in liking or disliking this or that Man's Way of Preaching; that, amidst so great Variety, they will find something to like, and profit by; which if they do, we are to account our Labours well employed, and well paid for.

led inirt

ake as

irrge ach

onuty

ns, rif-

in

of aily up-

ect

for. To make these Discourses more useful, there is something Casuistical in most of them; and such Rules, I hope, laid down, as will enable a Man of tolerable Judgment, and honest Mind, to determine safely in most Cases that ordinarily happen in Humane Life. In the First Sermon, I have endeavoured to treat Matters in so plain and easy a Manner, that, Ihope, even very young People will see and understand the Reasons of their Duty: In the rest, I suppose more Years and Consideration to make them useful. And, indeed, in all of them, I have had especial Regard to Citizens, and Men of that Condition, intending them mostly for their Service; whose Wants as I thought I best understood, so I was sure I owed them my best Assistance.

And because I thought that one Discourse would be as much as would be usually read at any one time, I have taken care, by a short Repetition of its Conse-

Consequence, and Connexion with the foregoing one, to make it in some sort compleat by itself, not trusting much to People's Memories. When I had made an End of these Discourses upon Relative Duties, the Volume, it seems, was found too small for some Purposes of the Bookseller, the big enough for my own, who only intended to treat of them; and therefore I was prevailed with to add Three more against Self-Murther, which, I hope, will not be without their Use, since that abborr'd Practice seems to gain some ground among us.

As these Sermons' were chiefly intended for your Benefit, so I have chosen to direct them to you, that they may both appear, and be more yours than any one's besides: And if you shall, on your part, account yourselves, in any measure, credited by such an Application to you; I shall, I assure you, on my own part, account myself sufficiently repaid by the Civility

Civility of reading them with Care and Diligence: There being nothing, but your true and lasting Benefit intended in this Work, by (GENTLEMEN,)

Your

Most Affectionate Friend,

and Humble Servant,

W. F.

E

Tl

TI

D

E

DIS-



THE

TABLE

OF

CONTENTS.

Duty of Children to Parents, Difcourses I, II, III. from Page I to 68 Exod. XX. Verse 12. Honour thy Father and thy Mother, that thy Days may be long in the Land, which the Lord thy God giveth thee.

The Case of Children's Marrying against the Will, and without Consent of Parents, p. 32

The Case of Children's going to Law with Parents, p. 53

Duty of Parents to Children, Discourse IV. p. 68

EPHES.VI. Verse 4. And ye Father's prowoke not your Children to Wrath; but a bring bring them up in the Fear and Nurture of the Lord.

Discourses V, VI. I Tim. V. Verse 8.

But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own House, he hath denied the Faith, and is worse than an Insidel.

The Case of Parents Disinheriting Children, p. 111

Duty of Wives to their Husbands, Difcourse VII.

I PET. III. Verse I, 2. Te Wives, be in Subjection to your own Husbands; that if any obey not the Word, they also may, without the Word, be won by the Conversation of the Wives: While they behold your chast Conversation coupled with Fear.

p. 131

Discourses VIII, IX, X, XI. I P E T. III.
Ver. 3,4. Whose adorning let it not be
that outward adorning of plaiting the
Hair, and of wearing of Gold, or of putting on of Apparel: But let it be the hidden

den Man of the Heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the Ornament of a a meek and quiet Spirit, which is in the fight of God of great price, p. 151 The Case of Dressing, and Apparel, at large, p. 154 Duty of Husbands to Wives, Discourses XII, XIII. COLOS. III. Verse 19. Husbands Love your Wives, and be not Bitter against

9

e,

il-

I

if-

in

nat

ay,

on-

be-

led

31

III.

be

the

ut-

id-

den

them. Duty of Servants to Masters, Discourfes XIV, XV.

Colos. III. Verses 22, 23, 24. Servants, obey in all things your Masters according to the Flesh; not with Eye-service, as Men-pleasers, but in Singleness of Heart, fearing God: And what soever you do, do it heartily, as unto the Lord, and not unto Men: Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the Reward of the Inheritance; for ye serve the Lord Christ.

The CONTENTS:

Duty of Masters to Servants, Discourse XVI. p. 311

COLOS. IV. Verse 1. Masters, give unto your Servants that which is just and equal, knowing that ye also have a Master in Heaven.

The Case of Self-Murther, Sermons I, II, III, p. 1

II SAM. XXII. Ver. 23. And when Ahithophel saw that his Counsel was not followed, he sadled his Ass, and arose, and gat him home to his House, to his City, and put his Houshold in order, and hang'd himself, and died, and was buried in the Sepulchre of his Father.

DIS-

th

in In

fh

A of R

th

T

la

th

th

DISCOURSEI

EXOD. XX. VERSE 12.

Honour thy Father and thy Mother, that thy Days may be long in the Land, which the Lord thy God giveth thee.



Ntending (if it please God) to treat of the feveral Duties we owe to our Neighbour, i.e. to one another, in the feveral Relations we stand in towards them; it is but fit to begin

with that, which is, in Nature, Reason, and God's Appointment, to be first practised: And that is, the Duty of Children to their Parents, express'd in the Words of the Text, Honour thy Father, &c. In discoursing upon which Words, I will, First, shew, what is meant by bonouring our Parents! And, Secondly, but conjunctly, shew the Reafons of our so honouring them: And, Thirdly, see to the Reward here promised, That thy Days may be long in the Land which the Lord thy God giveth thee.

First, What is meant by Honouring our Parents. To Honour fignifies a great many Things; and takes its Sense, especially, from the Person it relates to. To honour God is one thing; to honour the King, another; to honour our Superiours, a third: And to honour our Equals, or Inferiours, is a different thing from all the rest. And therefore the Word must not be taken in the same Sense, where-

wherever we meet it; but the Party, to whom it is to be paid, must determine its Meaning and Extent. And therefore, fince it is the Intent of this Commandment, to fecure the Duty of Children to Parents, the feveral Duties of them, in their feveral Instances, are comprehended in the Word Honour. When therefore we are commanded to honour our Father and Mother, we are commanded to love them, to respect them, to obey them, and to succour and support them all we can: First, we are commanded to love our Parents: But because, properly speaking, it is not in our Power (whatever we may think) to love or hate, to hope or fear, when, and what, and whom we will; but according as we apprehend the Thing, or Person desirable and lovely; and that, upon this account, it will depend much upon the Parents Management, whether the Children shall love with that Affection of the Heart, which both the Parents and themselves desire they should: Therefore, by being commanded to love our Parents, we are especially commanded to take and keep fuch Courfes, as will most probably secure and increase our natural Affection to our Parents, and to avoid and decline all Things that may any ways diminish it. To love our Parents, is so natural, so reasonable, so fit, and so expected, that few have the Confidence to own the Want of it, even when they know, and grieve, perhaps, they have it not: And the Want of this Affection being oftentimes the Occasion of our denying them that Respect, Obedience, and Support, we certainly owe, and ought, unquestionably, to pay to

Can the

f

P

ju

of

m

fh

an

W

no

tai

po

ou

(as

acc

ha

vei

er- the

m

nd

of

nil-

in

he

mare

bey

an:

ts:

our

ite,

we

ng;

pon

Pa-

hall

oth

ld:

Pa-

and

ents,

any

nathat

f it,

they

be-

hem

cer-

y to

them, it is to be improv'd and nourish'd by all the Confiderations we can raife. How far the Consideration of their being, under God, the Authors and Originals of our Life and Being, will contribute to the exciting this Affection, is not eafy to determine. The Ancients thought it would go a great way, and therefore infifted much upon it. They feem to have been very fond of Being, as if it were, of itself, a great Bleffing; whereas, if we confider it throughly, it is, of itself, no farther Good, than as it makes us capable of receiving Good; for if we are in Misery, our Being is then far from Good, occasioning us just so much Evil as we suffer; and, all that while, our Being is being miserable.

If God himself should create us, with Design of being miserable, we could not thank him much less love him, for giving us such Being : Nays should he make us to be miserable after this Life, and leave us to be as happy as we could, whilft we liv'd here; yet we could neither truly love, nor thank him, for creating us. The very Gertainty of being at any time miserable, by his Appointment, must make him dreadfully odious to our Minds; And therefore when we thank God (as we daily do) for our Creation, it is upon this account, that he has made us capable of being happy both here, and hereafter; that he has given us all the good Things of this World, i.e. Capacities and Powers of getting and enjoying them, and of attaining everlasting Happiness in the Life to come. It is always for fomething good, past, present, or promised for the future, B 2

that we thank God: And that is the sole Foundation of all Love; it terminates all upon ourselves, and our own Good; and where we neither have, nor do experience that, nor have any Good in hope, or prospect, it is impossible to love: And therefore the Love that Children owe their Parents, upon the account of receiving their Life and Being at their Hands, is only so far due, as the Being they give makes them capable of re-

F

1

b

1

il

H

A

fe

fi

ir

16

n

b

.W

ai

e

ceiving and enjoying other Good.

It is true, that the very having given Life and Being to their Children, without any other Consideration, excites or creates a new and singular Affection to them, properly Parental; because we find the like in other Creatures, that are incapable of any Confiderations: But yet, I queftion not but this Parental, Natural, and Irrelistible Affection, is greatly heightned and improv'd in Reasonable Creatures, by the Hopes of deriving fome Comfort, Credit, or Advantage from their Children: So that, although the Parental Love be the most disinterested of all Loves, yet is it truly felfish at the Bottom; proposing to itfelf Pleasure and Satisfaction, Honour and Credit; some Advantage or other from the Objects of its Love. But notwithstanding this, the singular and inexpressible Affection of Parents to their Children, deferves to be repaid with all the Love they can; because the Parental Love is hourly displaying and exerting itself, in all the beneficial Acts of Kindness it can think upon: It supplies all the Wants of helpless Infancy, secures from all the Hazards of heedlefs Childhood, and giddy

giddy and unthinking Youth: It shapes the Body, preserves it strait and upright, and keeps the several Limbs in order, and fits them for their natural Operations, and makes the Person beautiful and comely. And, to do this, it hears with many Troubles, and incommodious Hardships; and tho' these Matters appear but slight, and are but feldom thought upon; yet the Defects and Miseries that befal, where any of this Care is flackned, or this Love abated, are not small or inconfiderable; they have, fome of them, an Influence on us all our Lives.

But moreover, it is this Affection that informs the Mind, and regulates the Manners; that trains up the Reason, exercises the Memory, and instructs them to argue, and understand their little Affairs; and takes care to educate, and fit them for greater Matters: It is this, that brings them first to God in Baptism, and that keeps them after in the Ways of Goodness and Religion, by instilling into them wife and virtuous Principles; by remembring them constantly of their leveral Duties; by encouraging them in Good, with Kindnels, Favours, and Rewards; and by reproving, threatning, and correcting them when Evil, or tending thereto.

These, and a thousand other, are the Ways that Parents take to make their Children happy s besides those endless and innumerable Labours, Watchings, and Sollicitudes, that confume their whole Life, to make them happy with the Riches and good Things of this World; so that whatever Benefits can be the Ground and Foundation

B 3

and

ene-Supures

da-

ur-

nei-

any

ve:

neir

neir

ue,

and

on-

ular

ule

in-

uel-

fifti-

ov'd

eri-

rom

ntal

yet

0 it-

Ore-

jects

fin-

s to

the

our-

iddy

of Love in Children, the Care and Love of Parents abundantly affords them. And though the Parents are oblig'd, by Natural Instinct and Affection, i. e. by Principles of Love and Tenderness implanted in their Hearts by God, to do these Things, and take this Care of Children; and tho' they find their Pleasure, and Account, in so doing (for God, who made this Love, and this Provision necessary, hath also, in his Goodness, made it eafy and delightful to the Parent) yet is the Children's Love nevertheless due in return for the Parental one; because that Love is founded upon Benefits receiv'd, or hoped for: And whatever might move the Parents, yet it is certain they design'd the Benefits, and the Children find and feel them: And therefore are obliged to take the Remembrance of them into Confideration, to excite and stir them up to love their Parents, who have done so great Things for them; and who were not only the Authors of their Being, but also, under God, of their Welfare, and their present Happiness. And though the Parents Designs, and Endeavours after Happiness, should not fucceed according to their Wishes, as very often they will not; yet fince there is no Want of Love and Care in them, the Obligation on the Child is still the fame.

And I chuse to make the Sense of Benefits receiv'd, or at least intended, and the Hope of Benefits to come, the Bottom and Foundation of the Filial Love; not only because it is unquestionably so in Truth, and the Foundation of all other Love, and the true Cement of all Relations, and

that

Pa-

the

refe

and

n fo

this

efs,

t is

urn

nd-

and

er-

ren

to

ra-

Pa-

m;

Be-

nd

nts

ıld

ery

of

he

re-

Be-

he

12-

er

nd

at

that which truly obliges to the Performance of all Duties, and makes them to become Duties, antecedently to all Commands, whether of God or Man; but also for the Parent's fake, that they, knowing on what it is that Love is truly bottom'd, and expecting, desiring and approving nothing more than the Love of their Children, may take the greater Care to raife and fecure this Love, by laying fuch Foundation for it, that it cannot eafily miscarry; for this will shew them, that although the Fondness and the Blandishments of Parents will please and gain the Love of their Children, whilst they continue childish, wanton and unthinking; yet when they put away childish Things, they will want some other Foundation for them to build their Affection on: The Love, that was built upon their Play-things, will vanish when those are thrown away, and broken: And the Love, that should succeed, will want another Bottom: And that must be a wife, a virtuous, and religious Education; and fuch a reafonable and decent Provision of Things temporal, that the older the Children grow, the longer they live, the more they advance in Reason and Understanding, the better they shall love their Parents, the greater Reason, the juster Cause they shall see for their so Doing; they shall sensibly feel the advantageous Effects of their Parents Care. And therefore, upon this account, it is ofttimes much in the Parents Power to fecure the Children's Love, by the Obligations they may lay upon them: And let all People, when they find occasion to awaken and excite this Affection

B 4

to their Parents within them, call to mind the many Benefits they have received at their Hands,

as well as Being.

A Second Duty, Children owe their Parents, is Respect; that is, all external Honour and Civility. As Love comprizes all internal Honour and Esteem; all their Behaviour is to be submissive, dutiful and mannerly, and fuch as becomes Inferiours towards their Betters. It is an offence against natural Decency, to fee the Children bear themfelves upon the square with their Parents, to answer them rudely or flightly, or to be wanting in Respect towards them, whether in Looks or Gesture, in unbeseeming Words or Actions. And when Parents, through their Fondness or want of Judgment; are content to take off the restraint, to remove the usual Bars that kept their Children at due distance, and to admit them to Equality, it is great odds but they repent it quickly: Few young ones know how to use their Liberty, before their time. And besides, it makes the task of instructing and managing them much more difficult; for when the Awe and Check is taken off, (as it is by too much Condescension and Familiarity) your Counsels make but faint Impressions, and your Commands are constantly disputed. When Parents loose these Bands of Distance and Respect, if there be no Miscarriage on it, it is not owing to their Discretion, but to the Modesty and Goodness of the Children's Disposition. But I am speaking now of the Children's Behaviour, where the Parent has not made way for Difrespect, by any undue

undue Relaxation of Discipline; it is to be full of Kindness and Good-nature, good Manners and Civility. They are oblig'd to fay things honourable of them, to pry as little into their Infirmities and Failings as they can themselves, and to extenuate and conceal them as much from others. And for this there is fo much Reason and Decency in Nature, that it shocks us, unavoidably, to hear one reproach his Parents with either Vices or Infirmities, tho' what he fays is true, unless it be done with great Concern and Tenderness, with Grief and Pity, and that to fuch as will make no fcorn or mockage of them; but when they do it with Contempt or Pleafure in the telling, we cannot help abhorring fuch Impiety: The Hearts of all Men go along with Noah, in laying punishment on Cham for his unnatural and profane Derision; and love the Memory of those Sons, that would not see themfelves, nor fuffer others to be Witnesses of the Miscarriage of their Father.

There is, in a word, no worfer Token or Prognostick of a bad Disposition in Children, than to see them wanting in Reverence to their Parents, in any kind: 'Tis probable they will never make good Citizens and Subjects to the Commonwealth, or good Relations of any sort, failing in those respects which are most due, and paid with greatest ease, and accepted the most

kindly.

the

nds.

nts,

1V1-

and du-

na-

em-

to

ing

s or

ons.

or

the

ept

mit

re-

to

des,

we

uch

nds

ofe

ere

eir

ing

the

iny

And that Children may discharge this part of their Duty better, as it is partly in the Parents power, so should it be their Care and Concern.

They

10 Duty of Children to Parents.

They must be careful how they live, and behave themselves in fight of their Children, and what Examples they fet them; for if they make themselves vile and cheap in their Children's Eyes, by too much Familiarity, by light and indiscreet Carriage, either towards them, or others in their fight, they will in vain expect that Reverence and Respect that is due to their Relation. The Foundation of Respect is some supposed Excellence and Worth; and, in this case, some kind of Superiority; and when Parents admit their Children to an Equality, and make them confcious to their Indiscretions, Follies, and Miscarriages, they do but invite Contempt, takeing away the very Foundation and Support of all Refpect and Honour. The Children should not, if it could be hindred, be so much as Witnesses of any thing indecently faid or done by Parents: All the domestick Differences, the idle and unfeemly Quarrels and Debates, the fimple and unkind Words and Actions, that much too commonly pass betwixt the Parents, should be concealed and hidden from Children: For they obferve and treasure up these evil Follies; and, secretly, at least, fide with the one, and learn to hate or to despise the other, or entertain, too foon, a mean opinion of them both; which undermines all manner of Esteem and dutiful Obfervance.

Nay, and sometimes it comes to pass, that one Parent will, most unadvisedly and ungodlily, support the Children in Contempt and Disrespect to the other; and, to vex and wreak their Anger

d

s

1-

rs

7.

d

ir

1-

1-

9-

H

t,

es

s:

1-

1-

1-

0-

e-

00

1-

6-

at

V,

Et

er

on

on each other, will make their Children miferable by Disobedience. This is a fearful Case, and a thing they ought at no hand to do; for neither Parent has Authority to absolve the Children of their Duty to the other. And though one of them should be of evil Fame, and bad Example; yet is Respect, and all exteriour Honour to be paid them, even when they can be neither lov'd, obey'd, or imitated by the Children: For this part of Honouring the Parents is always in the Children's power, and always to be done: And therefore tho' the Case may sometimes be so hard, as that the Children shall not be able to pay Obedience to the feveral, and, fometimes, opposite Commands of their Parents; yet it can never happen fo that they shall not always be able to pay Respect and Honour to them both: And, therefore, of this they must never fail, for the doing this can never be an injury to either Parent.

And if one Parent should be so unreasonable as to require the Child to affront or disrespect the other, the Child would be safe in a respectful Disobedience, and Resusal; because no Parent has a Right of taking away another's Right; and each of them have equal Right to the Respect and Honour of their Children: And therefore the Honour and Respect that one requires at the Children's Hands, is of equal force to pay it to the other. It must indeed be paid to both, by all Children; and 'tis a most unkind and wicked thing, for any Parent to command, require, encourage, or be pleas'd with any rude, ill-natur'd and undutiful Behaviour of

Provocation or Account whatever. Children are the Pledges of mutual Love, and the Cement of Affection: The use of them is, naturally to make up Differences; and 'tis sad, when they become

occasions, or widners of a Breach.

But after all, there can be no fuch univerfally obliging Rules of Honour and Respect, as that all People should alike observe them: The common Usages, and Customs of the Country, are like to be the best Standard and Measure of Refpect and Honour: And there feems to be a Refpect peculiar to some Qualities and Conditions, that were not proper to be us'd by others. Only this I think may be observ'd, that the meaner People are, the less they look after and require this dutiful Respect at their Children's Hands: And they commonly fare the worse for it; there being abundantly more Instances of Rudeness, Stubbornness, Ill-nature, Disobedience, and Rebellious Carriage among the Children of ordinary and mean People, than those of better Quality and Condition; which should not be, for the poorest Parents have right to Honour and Respect from their Children, as well as the Rich and High; and they both might and would have it, if they would look after it in due time, and require it of them; and it would be a great Advantage both to themselves and Children, to bring them up, though never fo mean, in a respectful Awe, and dutiful Regard to their Parents they would find their account in fo doing, and reap more Comfort from their Children than they commonly do.

y

e

of

e

e

y

1-

And what I faid of keeping Children at a Distance, is also to be understood with Caution and Discretion; it does most commonly and naturally preserve Respect and Honour, and therefore it is generally best to be observ'd: But the different Circumstances of Parents, and the different Tempers and Dispositions of Children may make great Alteration; and therefore are to come into Confideration. Some Children and Young People are of fo Modest a Temper, and so difcreetly Educated and Behaved, that all the Liberty you give them, does them no Harm; they still preserve a lively Sense of Respect, and never go beyond their bounds, but demean themselves Decently in the midft of Favour and Indulgence ? These would be hurt by great Restraint and Awe, and the Parent would lose a great deal of Comfort and Innocent Delight, by keeping fuch at too much distance. Others grow Wanton, Insolent and Headstrong upon the least Indulgence, and know not how to Behave themselves under Liberty and Kindness; and fall from their Respect immediately, neither knowing themfelves, nor others. This is the general Tendency; this is the Humour of most; and Liberty is hurtful to them: Restraint and Awe is best for these, and without them they are miserable.

The Difference of Age is also to be considered, as well as Temper, in the matter of Distance. It would be Weakness to expect the same Regard from the Elder as from the Younger: The Elder must no more be wanting in Respect than the Younger; but they are each to consider what is

proper

proper and becoming them to pay; and so is the Parent too. No Age, no Quality, no Change of Condition, tho' never fo much for the better, can exempt the Children from paying Honour and Respect to their Parents; but they will each of them make some Change and Alteration of the Expression of that Respect. This Honour and Respect of Children to their Parents, is not only Handsome and Becoming, but exceedingly useful to many good purposes in publick Government; and therefore all States and Kingdoms have taken care to fecure them. And therefore I have chosen, not only to shew the Children the Reasonableness, the Decency and Necessity of it, and the Obligations they lie under from God's Command; but to excite the Parents also, to endeavour, what they can, to preserve and keep it up in their Children; having fuch Power, and fo many Advantageous Opportunities of doing it, which they must not omit, both for their own, and for their Children's fakes: It would be better, if they would try to Punish, rather than Grieve for the Slight or Difrespects shewed by their Children; they would certainly Grieve the less and seldomer.

And this would also make way for the readier and better Obedience to their Commands, which is the Third and Principal Thing to be considered, and certainly concluded under this Commandment, of Honouring our Parents. And, indeed, without Obedience, Respect and Honour would be meer Formality, and Mockage. There is all the Reason in the World, that whilst Children want Understanding to direct their Choice and

Will, they should have no other Will but that of their Parents; and therefore should obey whilft they do not understand. Even Children themselves see this, as soon as they come to Reafon in the least degree: They see, that if they had been left to themselves, they had in many Cases come to Mischief; and therefore see how fit it. was they should obey their Parents Orders and Commands. And People, fomewhat older, fee as much Necessity that they should do so too; and they themselves will see as much, when they have once outgrown their Childish Fancies. They will fee that their Parents Wisdom, and Experience, and Capacity, was much greater than their own, and therefore fitter to Rule and Guide. I believe there are few People in the World, that have, whilst Young, disputed and repin'd at the Commands of their Parents, who have not afterwards chang'd their Minds, and found they were truly wifer, better, and more reafonable to be complied withal, than their own Wills and Humours; altho' for the present they thought otherwise. It is most likely that, having liv'd longer, stood higher, and observ'd Things better, they should be most in the right, and give the best Advice. The Parents must needs difcern what is most fit and proper for their Children: And therefore tho' they may be now and then mistaken, yet it is always safest to follow their Infructions and Commands. When Children obey their Parents, tho' they afterwards happen to miscarry; yet they have this to comfort themselves withal, that they miscarried

in their Duty and Obedience; that they took the fafest and wifest Course, and such as all good People approve; and every one is much more ready to Pity and Help fuch, under their Misfortunes, than fuch as fell into the like, through Stubbornness, and Self-conceit, and Disobedience. There is therefore all the Prefumption in the World upon the Parents side, that their Advice and Commands are the wifest and most reafonable. And next, there is all the Certainty of the good Intention and Defign that can be. Who should intend the Benefit of Children so much as the Parent? Why, they feem to live for no other end and purpose, than to do them good; they have no other Aim than their Advantage; all their Care and Study, all their Thoughts are fixt upon them: They fuffer a Thousand Inconveniencies for their Sake, and choose to live, sometimes, penurioufly, and hardly, that their Children may live at Ease and Pleasure. And who should sufpect the Counfels, and Commands of fuch, of want of Love and Kindness? And there is nothing more proper to perswade, than an Opinion that they do it out of Love, and defign our Good thereby. Now no one can possibly be so affur'd of the Kindness and Good-will of any one befides, as of his Parents; and therefore the Commands of no one ought to be entertain'd with a better Opinion of them; and this would help to forward our Obedience to them. It would be well, if the Young ones would (as they are capable) confider a little with themfelves. These Counsels and Commands come

in had fel per joy as bu ha the cli Ih no thi lec ma Pr AI ha th the Bo ftu Co in far W

the

15

an

th

fpe

an

fro

from People that have liv'd a great deal longer in the World than I, have made Remarks, and had Experience: They have had Parents themfelves, and either followed their Advice, or repented of not doing it: It is true, the Duties enjoyn'd me are unacceptable to me; they are fuch as I should not choose, and such as I do not like; but I have often found myself mistaken; and I have now no reason to think myself wifer than they, who perswade me otherwise than I am inclin'd: I am but of Yesterday, and know little; I have no Experience; and fure these Parents have not liv'd fo long for nothing; Old Age has fomething in it good most certainly; Wisdom, Knowledge and Experience, commonly attend it, and make them fit for Counsellors: There is all the Prefumption of Wisdom on their side that can be. And then, for their Affection and Good-will, I have equal Reason to conclude on them also; there is no Body fo like to wish me well as they; there is no Body has done fo much for me, no Body grieves at my Miscarriages like them, or studies and endeavours to prevent them with that Concern and Care: Other People, as it comes in their way, give me good Counsel, and say the fame Things, in effect, that Parents do; they warn me of the fame Dangers, and exhort me to the fame Duties; but I can plainly perceive there is a great deal of Difference betwixt the Mind and Concern with which our Parents speak, and those of other People, tho' good Friends. They speak with a lively Sense and Feeling, with Force and Affection, in great Earnest, and from the Bottom

d

ť

S

H

tom of the Heart: As if they were to endure the Evils, they warn us to avoid; and share with us the Miseries we shall undergo, if we follow not their Counsels; so that they seem to be exceedingly interested in our behalf: And yet 'tis evident, they can make no manner of Advantage of our complying with them; they can get nothing by us but Content and Satisfaction; all they have already is ours in Defign, and all they are getting still, and intend or defire to get, is for us. So that we can suspect them of no Design upon us; and all these Things shew us most evidently, that what they fay to us, the Commands they lay upon us, proceed from the trueft, most fincere, difinterested Affection in the World. They are afflicted and undone when we miscarry; let them be never fo wife, or rich, or honourable, our Folly, Sin and Disobedience, will make them miserable: Although they lofe thereby neither their Understanding, Wealth nor Places; yet such is their Concern for us, that in all these Things they are not happy, unless we will confent to make them fo, by being dutiful and obedient, and taking good and virtuous Courfes: And, on the other fide, let us be never fo wife, or rich, or honourable, all that our Parents get by it is Pleasure and Content, for which (instead of taking ought away) they lift up their Hands and Hearts to God, and blefs us. And can I think the Counfels and Commands of fuch People are not the best that they could think on, the most kindly intended, and fittest for my Practice and Compliance?

None

wh

obe

and

wi

the

obe

ren

hin

is r

Por

tion is c

tho

mai

to the

Cor

drei

is al

oper

duce

have fron

Drir then

and

now

but

re

th

W

xtis

ge

0-

ey

re

15.

on

ly,

ay

re,

re

E112

ly, le:

er-

eir

are

em

ng

ner

ra-

ind ght

to

un-

the dly

m-

one

None of these Considerations are above the Capacity and Understanding of young People, when they come to be capable of receiving and obeying Commands: There is nothing fo plain and eafy as to confider, that Parents love their Children dearly, and without Design; and are older, wifer, and more experienc'd than themselves; and therefore the fittest to command, and fittest to be obeyed. And though the Commands of the Parents do often cross the Children's Desires, and hinder them from purfuing their Pleasures; yet it is not because the Parents envy them their Pleafures, or deny them Satisfaction, to flew their Power and Authority; but because the Prosecution of their Defires, in these forbidden Instances, is criminal, and would be hurtful to them, although perhaps they see it not: They never command them to do any thing, but the doing it tends to the Children's Advantage; nor ever forbid them any thing, but what is hurtful in itself, or Confequences: And therefore, though the Children fee nothing but Pleafure in what they propose; yet the Parent stands higher, and sees there is also Sin, or Danger near it; and sees how it will operate at distance, and what Fruits it will produce. And as they remember their Parents to have hinder'd them, when they were younger, from eating feveral Meats, or drinking feveral Drinks, and doing feveral Things, which they then lik'd, and defir'd to have and do, and griev'd and repin'd at their Refusal, which, yet, they are now fatisfied, proceeded from no Unkindness, but turn'd, as it was intended, to their Benefit;

fo might they learn to conclude, that the commanding them Things, for the present uneasy, and forbidding them Things, for the prefent fweet and defirable, may be full as reasonable, and fit to be complied withal; and that when a little time is over-past, and the Season of Pleafure fomewhat spent, they will be equally satisffied with the Care and Wisdom of their Parents. And this young People would do well to improve; they are capable of confidering, and they ought to do it. Let them inquire of all the Neighbourhood, of all their Acquaintance that are grown up, and older than themselves (and the older still the better;) let them inquire of all, or any of these, and see how many there are that will tell them, It is better, fafer and wifer, to follow their own Humours, than the Advice of their Parents; and how many, upon Experience, have fucceeded in disobeying their Commands; how many there are who are not griev'd at their Disobedience, and do not wish most earnestly they had complied with what was advis'd, or requir'd of them: And when they find that all the World agree, that notwithstanding the prefent Desires, and the Uneasiness of complying with the Commands of Parents, yet it is better fo to do; that they who have obeyed, are very much fatisfied; and they who have not, are griev'd and troubled, and wish they had: They will fee they ought to conclude, that however unacceptable fome Commands of Parents may for the present be, yet it is better to yield to them, than to indulge to their own Humours; and

an th up

up pl bu ra ca

fo th

th fh fo in

ar

que H

hi no o' A

co

P

d

and that the united Wisdom and Experience of the whole World is a fafer Bottom to proceed

upon, than any present Longing.

m-

aly,

ent

ole,

n a

lea-

tif-

nts.

im-

hey

the

hat

and

e of

are

ifer,

vice

eri-

om-

ev'd

ear-

is'd,

tall

pre-

ying

etter

very

are

hey

ever

may

d to

urs;

These are some of the Grounds and Principles upon which the Obligation of Children to comply with, and obey their Parents Commands, is built, and depends: There are also others; but I rather chose to mention, and insist on these, because they are such as young People themselves. who are principally concern'd, may fee the Reafon of, and have Capacity and Parts to confider, that their Obedience may not be altogether blind and implicit; and because it is as probable, as any thing besides, that they are the Reasons, at the bottom, of God's Command, that Children should obey their Parents: And are also the Reafons why these Children should themselves, when in time they come to be Parents, exact and require, and find Obedience at their Children's Hands. This every one expects, this all are naturally lead to: Where is the Parent that does not think it reasonable his Children should obey him, even against their Inclinations? And should not prefer kis Wisdom and Experience to their own Will or Understanding? And trust to his Affection, Love and Favour, rather than purfue their own Humours? And upon the same Account and Grounds that any one expects Obedience from his Children, he knows he ought to pay it to his Parents. Now Children and young People observing (as they easily may) that Parents univerfally exact Obedience at their Children's Hands, may very well conclude, that they shall do so too, whenever they come to be Parents; and may conclude, that there must certainly be good Reason in a Practice that all the different Nations of the World agree and center in. And if they can imagine that all the World could not agree in any thing that was not reasonable and just, and yet agree in requiring Children to obey their Parents, they will quickly see that it is reasonable and just for Children to obey their Parents; for the Parents could not reasonably require it, if it were not reasonable that the

If

elf

the

fro

all

fei

th

W

di

bo

th

1 it

Children should give it.

But left these Reasons should not prevail, God makes it a Command, and bids us Honour our Father and Mother: So that he, who is disobedient now, offends against Command as well as Reason; against God as well as Man: And to shew us how fit it is to comply with, and obey our Parents, God calls himself throughout the Holy Scriptures our Father, and from that Title and Relation calls for our Obedience. And therefore stubborn, head-strong, disobedient and rebellious Children, ought to think upon these Things; to confider all the Ties and Obligations that they have, to be obedient to their Parents; the Reasonableness, the Pleasure, and Security of being fo; the Approbation of all good People, and the Bleffing of God that goes along with it: And, on the other hand, the Grief and Trouble of Mind, the Sorrow and Repentance, at home; the Shame and Infamy from abroad, and the Difpleasure of Almighty God, that attend and follow Disobedience to their Parents. They ought, I lay,

Pa-

cer-

the

iter

orld

ea-

hil-

fee

ey

na-

the

od

dias

to ey

he

le

ele

ns

5;

of

2,

e

I fay, to think upon these Things, and whatever else may forward them in the Performance of their Duty. But because there are a great many Cases, in which the Children plead Exemption from this Rule; and in which they do not actually obey their Parents Commands, and yet defend themselves as no Transgressors of this Law; it may be of some use to see in what Particulars they are oblig'd to obey without Reserve, and in what they are at Liberty; that the Duty of Children, and the just Authority of Parents, may be both of them secur'd.—But of these Things in the following Discourses.

DISCOURSE II.

EXOD. XX. VERSE 12.

Duty of Children to Parents.

Aving shewn, That under Honouring Father and Mother, is comprehended Loving, Respecting, Obeying, and Relieving them under any Necessity, I had only time to speak to the Motives and Obligations, Children have to pay their Parents, Love, Respect and Obedience; and to excite the Parents to secure these several Parts of Duty from the Children to themselves, by all the Ways and Methods they could think on, as well for their Children's sake, as for their own Comfort: I am now, before I leave this Head, to consider some of the Cases, in which the Children plead Exemption from this Command; and to lay down

24. Duty of Children to Parents.

down fuch Rules as may, most probably, secure the Duty of Children, and the just Authority of Parents.

And, First, it is certain that all Commands of God must be obeyed, before those of Parents; if ever they interfere, our Duty to God is most undoubtedly to be preferr'd. The Counfels or Commands of Parents must never sway so far with Children, as to cause them to do what God forbids, or to neglect to do what God commands; because the Authority of God is first, and greatest; nothing is to stand in Competition with it; but then the Command of God must be plain and evident; it must not be a doubtful and disputed Thing; but full as certain, as that Obedience is due to the Commands of Parents: Walk ye not in the Statutes of your Fathers, neither observe their Judgments, nor defile your selves with their Idols: I am the Lord your God, walk in my Statutes, and keep my Judgments, and do them; faith God to his People, Ezek. 20. 18. In wicked and forbidden Instances, we are not to be led by their Example, Counsels, or Commands; but then must hate our Father, and our Mother, and follow Christ; i. e. prefer our Duty and Obedience to God, to all other Confiderations. Thus if Parents should be fo wickedly inclin'd as to command their Children to lie, to steal, to do Violence and Injustice, the Children must refuse, but with Refpect; they are not at liberty to obey, they have an antecedent Obligation, they are tied by God to Truth, and Honesty, and Justice: Children obey your Parents, in all Things, for this is well pleaure

y of

s of

ts;

nost

or far

boi

ds;

it;

nd

ed

is

not

eir ls:

nd to

d-

n-

ate 7;

to ld

ir

n-

e-

d

1-

But then it is explain'd in Ephes. 6. 1. Children obey your Parents, in the Lord, for this is right; i.e. according to God's Command and Will; for to obey them against God, can neither be right nor pleasing, and so we should have understood him had he not explain'd himself, and so we must understand him in all other Places. But of this there is not much Dispute; People do generally agree, that God is to be obeyed rather than Man.

But though Children are at liberty to disobey unjust Commands, yet are they not always at liberty to do or undertake even Things that are truly good and religious, without the Confent, or against the Commands of their Parents: That is, where the Thing to be done or undertaken, is not as certainly commanded by God, as it is commanded to obey our Parents; we are there rather to obey our Parents, commanding us not to do fuch Thing, than to do it, though it be truly good in itself: And such Obedience to Parents, would not be obeying Man rather than God; because such Thing is not expresly commanded them by God. The Case is common in the World abroad, though it concerns us but little. To retire from the Business and Temptations of the World, into a Cloyster, there to devote the Whole of their Lives to Prayer and Meditation, and the more immediate Service of God, is certainly (with them) exceeding laudable, and religious; and to avoid Temptations, by Prayer and Meditation, is certainly commanded by God:

God: But yet this is not lawful for Children to undertake without Consent, or against the Commands of their Parents; and the Pretences, that are made for such a Disobedience, are not strong enough to bear it out. They say, that to serve God no Man need to ask Leave: That's very true in the general; but as to the particular Manner of serving him, there may be great Need of asking Leave, because it may concern another: It may be to the Parents Prejudice to be defrauded of the Children's Service, or otherways hurtful to him.

They fay, that if the Father be Superiour, yet God is the Supreme; and bath more Right to the Children than the Parents have: This is also true; but this Supreme hath bounded his Right by Commands, which are first to be observ'd, and after that the Parents. God hath a Right to be obeyed, and this no Duty to Parents can dispense withal; but then this Right is only to be known by his Commands: The Children cannot fay, This is a good Thing that I am about to undertake, and therefore God hath a Right to my Performance of it, unless it be commanded; for many Things are good that are not commanded expresly to all People, but only to be done in Time and Place convenient, and by fit and proper Persons. And when Children withstand the Commands of their Parents, upon Pretence of pleasing God, they forget that God is best pleas'd with Obedience; and that they neglect to obey God, commanding them to obey their Parents, whilst they think to please him in doing a Thing that

that he has left them at liberty to do or not, and that their Parents would not have them do.

They say moreover, That though the Parents have a Right over the Bodies of their Children; yet that they are to have the Diffosal of their Souls, as being the most interested and concern'd in them: And this is also certainly true; but obeying the Parents Commands will not hurt the Children's Souls; their Souls may certainly be fafe without their entring into a Religious House, and devoting their whole Lives to Prayer and Medi-To ferve God, and be very devout; to tation. pray much, and meditate often; are very compatible and confiftent with staying in the World, and obeying the Commands of Parents: But to disobey, and grieve, and it may be injure the Parents by fuch Retirement, are not confiftent with Religion, and our Duty, to either God or our Parents. So that to do well and wifely, we must obey our Parents Commands, of which we are certain, rather than certainly disobey them, in hopes of pleafing God, by pursuing our own Inclinations, of which there is no Necessity. The Children are indeed to dispose of their own Souls, and all the reason in the World they should; because they are only concern'd in them, and shall be answerable for them: And therefore if Parents command their Children to be wicked and ungodly, or to do any Thing that might destroy or hurt their Souls, they were not to be obeyed, or hearkned to: If they should command to renounce Christianity, or to despise Morality, it were nothing; they have no Right to Obedience: But

e f

But when the Case is only of some particular Mode or Manner of ferving God, the Soul is fecure as well in one as the other; and the Pretence of greater Sanctity, and the more advantageous Opportunity of living holily, is not a Cause sufficient for a Child to withdraw himself from his Father's Power, to which he is justly subjected, and is not Master of himself, to give himself up to other Government, where his Parents shall have no more to do with him: And if it be true, that the Children's Bodies are under the Government and Disposal of Parents, it will be unjust to deprive them of that Power, under Pretence of taking care of the Soul, which may also be secur'd the other Way. The ancient Christians were very tender of the Children's Duty to their Parents; and therefore would not admit any one to fuch Retirement, Monastick Discipline, or Vow of Celibacy, without the Confent and Goodwill of their Parents, though Things were then much otherwise, than now, or of late. And yet the Men, who, by these Vows and Promises set the Children at liberty from their Parents, are fo restrain'd by Sense, and the Reason of the Thing, that they will not admit any of the Male Kind to make fuch Vow of Religious Life till 14 or 16 Years of Age, nor any of the Female till 12; which does not at all justify them, for those are not the Years of Consideration and Discretion: The Light of Reason does but then begin to shine forth: They have commonly then just Wit enough to think they have more Understanding than they have; to be conceited, confident, and eafily e-

ce

115

f-

is

d,

p

11

O

f

S

r

more

eafily to be impos'd upon by the gay Appearances, and pompous Snares, that are laid for them. A more mature Age, and a Disposition naturally propense to a devout and solitary Life, might make fuch Choice more reasonably to be complied with by the Parent; for Age and natural Inclination are the Things that most excusably emancipate and free a Son or Daughter, from following the Counfels or Commands of Parents: Though what that Age is, will best be determined by Custom and Confent of People. This Case is now out of Doors with us; and we have not any like it, that I can think on, where Men pretend to free the Children from obeying their Parents Commands, upon the Account of doing a better Thing, the giving themselves up to God. I only mentioned it, to shew, that though the Commands of Parents are never to be preferr'd to the Commands of God, yet that those Commands must needs be plain and certain; and that Children are not at liberty to withstand the Commands of their Parents, upon Pretence of doing Things truly good and religious, and obeying God rather than Man. When they obey God rather than Man (whom they should otherwise obey) the Command of God must be as evident as the Command of their Parents, i. e. they must be certainly God's Commands.

Secondly, It is also certain, that the Laws of our Country are to take place of the private Commands of our Parents: That is, we are not tied to obey our Parents when they command us any Thing contrary to the Laws of the Land; no

ret

W

more than when they command Things contrary to the Laws of God. The Reason of which is this, that the Publick Good being greater, and to be preferr'd to any Man's private Good, and without which all private Men could have and enjoy no Good, it cannot be preferv'd but by Obedience to fuch Laws as are made to fecure it: And therefore no one can have Right to fuch Obedience as would obstruct the Publick Good, which all Laws are prefum'd to confult especially: And a Man must not compare the Benefits he receives from his Parents, with the Benefits the Publick would receive by his fingle Obedience to the Laws, but with the Benefits the Community receives from the Obedience of every fingle Subject; and then he will fee that it is more reasonable the Laws should be obeyed rather than any private Man against them; for if one Son may obey his Parent against the Laws, so may another, and then more: And therefore it is certain, that none may; for no one's Good is to be confidered in If a Father there-Competition with the Publick. fore should command his Son to betray his Country, fet the Capitol on Fire, blow up the Magazine, bear false Witness, give his Opinion contrary to the Laws, or be instrumental to the overthrowing the Constitutions of the Kingdom; he must not fo honour his Father, as to obey any fuch Commands. He must say as Agesilaus said to his Father, advising him to give a Judgment against the Laws; You have your self, Sir, taught me to observe the Laws from my Youth up, and I am now going on to obey you, in taking care to keep them. They are, in all fuch Cases, to appeal to their Parents better inform'd; they are to presume them always willing, that the Children should do Just and Honest Things; and not so much to mind what they bid them do, when Concern'd, as what they would have them do, when out of that Concern.

0

These are the two Cases in which Children are exempted from Obeying the Commands of their Parents; when either the Laws of God, or of the Land interpose, we are to hearken to them. And even, in these Cases, we are to Disobey our Parents, with great Modesty and Tenderness; not with Upbraidings and Reproaches, with high and fcornful Refufals; but by declining and avoiding fuch Commands, with all the gentle Arts, and Methods of Submission possible. Even in a Righteous Cause, the Language of the Children must be Humble to the Parents, faith Salvian: Because they cannot, or will not Obey, they must not therefore Triumph and grow Infolent. One should not eafily appear to Understand that any Wicked and Unlawful Thing is commanded by our Parents: But at no hand we must comply with any fuch Commands. In other Cases, of Matters indifferent, Obedience is the fure fide; and yet there is great Regard to be had to the Age, and to the Customs of the Country, and the Discretion of the Children; and to the Circumstances of the Parents, before one can well Determine of the Obedience that is due: Without confidering thefe, and other Particulars, it will not be easy to pass a true Judgment in the most common Case, and the most Violation of the 5th Commandment.

It is not indeed expresly faid in Scripture, that Children shall not Marry without the Consent, or against the Will of their Parents; but it is expresly said, that they shall Honour and Obey them; and it will be hard to reconcile Marrying against Consent, with Honouring the Parents; or Marrying against Command, with Obeying them. And, generally speaking, the Instances and Examples of Marriage, in Scriptures, are fuch, as shew the Parents had the chiefest Hand in making of them up. The Stile still was, That such a one gave his Son, or Daughter, to such a one in Marriage. So that the Law being given particularly to the Jews, and this being the general Practice amongst them, it is not unreasonable to think, they held themselves oblig'd by this Law, not to Marry against their Parents Will and Consent: But whether oblig'd by this Law, or no, the Custom was fuch, that it was feldom otherwife. probable, that, in the Patriarchal Age, Esau might Marry against the Consent of his Parents; but Esau has all along a bad Character; and yet it is not certain that he married against Command; but only certain that his Wives prov'd very troublefom and vexatious to Rebeccah.

It is also certain, that such was the Custom amongst the Greeks and Romans, two of the wisest and most civiliz'd People of all the World. There

would

W

th

tr

of

it

dr

an

an

co

no

an

A

te

C

A

alc

of

fti

Co

no

be

to

and

Ca

po.

I

dre

any

Pa

the

it

a

it

ts

(-

1 ;

ft

-

130

<-

as

g

ne

1-

ly

ce

y

1-

ut

m

is

ht

ut

is

ut

e-

m

eft

re

ild

would be no end of Citations, to this purpose, out of their Books; they are full of them: And though there must be many Examples to the contrary, yet are there no Rules or Precepts in favour of the Children's Liberty; but when they take it, it is still with Blame. Nay, this Disposal of Children by Parents, is not only a Matter reasonable and fair, and approv'd by wife and good Men among them; and strengthen'd by Custom uncontroul'd and immemorial, but it pass'd into Laws and Statutes. They reckoned there was no Marriage without the Confent of the Parents, and the Children were all accounted Baftards: And Christianity for a great while made no Alterations in the Matter; the Civil Laws of Christian Emperors confirm'd the Opinion of the Ancients; and the Sentence of the Church went along with them: The Canons, and the Judgment of the best Writers, are all on this side: They still make the Consent of Parents essential to the Contract. The Laws of our own Nation take no notice of Consent of Parents; they trust it, I believe, to the Reason of the Thing it self, and to the Wisdom of all Ages, and to the Custom and Example of almost all Nations; but the Canons of our Church dare not venture that, but positively require the Consent of Parents: They [101] tell us, That it is not Lawful for any Children (unless arrived to the Age of 21) to make any Marriage-Contract, without the Consent of their Parents; or, in case they are dead, of their Guardians and Governors. And that is one good End the proposes in Publishing the Banns of Matrimony,

n

le

ap

m

al

yo

th

to

tu

is,

M

the

ma

not

Po

Or

wi

you

ing

oth

Pa

2000

mil

But to all this, it is but reasonable to hear and confider what may be answered by the Chil-Marriage is certainly a State and Condition, upon which the Happiness or Misery of Life does very much depend; more than indeed most People think upon before-hand. To be confin'd to live with one perpetually, of whom we have no Liking and Esteem, must certainly be a most uneasy State: There had need be a great many good Qualities, to reconcile a constant Conversation to one, even where there is fome share of Kindness and Affection; but, without Love, the very best of all good Qualities will never make a constant Conversation easy and delightful. And whence proceed those endless and innumerable Domestick Miseries, that plague and utterly confound fo many Families, but from want of Love and Kindness in the Wife or Husband? From thence comes their Neglect, and careless Management of Affairs at home, and their profuse extravagant Expences made abroad. In a word, it is not easy, as it is not needful, to recount the Evils that arife, abundantly,

nay hilnot re-071 mg, Care fuflow ary. near hilndiv of leed be nom inly be a conre is vithities eaty endthat ilies, Wife glect, ome, nade s not

bun-

ntly,

dantly, from the want of Conjugal Affection only. And fince this is so certain, a Man or Woman runs the most fearful Hazard that can be, who Marries without this Affection in themselves, and without good Affurance of it in the other. And fince it is impossible for any one to love with another's Affections, but with their own, the Parents must consider this especially, how they engage their Children to Marry, where, at the least, a hopeful Prospect of this Love doth not appear; left, whilft they are endeavouring to make their Children happy, they make them of all Creatures the most miserable; and make them irremediably fo. If there be Reason, that young People should be left in any Thing to themselves, and to their own Liberty, it seems to be in the Choice of those, with whom they are to live and die; with whom they are to venture being happy or unhappy all their Days. is, without doubt, in nothing fo necessary as in Marriage. Do you not know (faith one of old) that Marriages belong to us our selves, and must be matter of our Choice? Our Affections are our Masters; not our Servants; and you cannot with all your Power and Might, nor by your frequently reiterated Orders and Commands, cause me to Love or Hate where you shall fix; nor is it in my Power to Obey you if I would. Then is Marriage like to be lastingly happy, when both agree in Loving each the other: And therefore since I am to have a Wife, the Partner of my Bed, and of all the Joys and Sorrows that are likely to befal me, whilst I live; I must seek for one that I can like (I think) for ever.

I do not fay, that this is all as reasonable as it should be, but there is Reason enough in it, to make the Parents very careful and considering, that they urge not their Authority too far, in constraining their Children to Marry, not only where there is no visible Aversion, but where there is great Likelyhood that there will not be a

good Agreement.

As for the Custom and the Practice of the Fews, and all the Easterlings, together with the Greeks and Romans, they do, indeed, fufficiently evidence the Power and Authority that Parents exercised in the Disposal of their Children; but they do not, for all that, shew the Reasonableness of such Authority; nor is it of the Law of Nature fo to do. And befides, they had some of them Power of Life and Death, and did fometimes expose, and might, by Allowance, sell their Children into Slavery; which are Privileges that do not naturally or reasonably attend the Parental Authority and Relation: And therefore there is great Abatement to be made from all Arguments, that conclude only from Customs and Usages, tho' of wife and civiliz'd People.

The Roman Law-givers, (faith a Gracian, S. Empir) have put the Children, in the Parents Power, in the fame Capacity with Slaves; the Parents are the Masters of them, and all they have, till they are emancipated as Slaves are, which other People look upon as Tyrannical. The Roman Laws (fays another, Simplic. in Epict.) having regard, as well to the Natural

Su-

a

N

f

a

fi

a

al

ai

ly

01

p]

w

di

to

ıg,

11-

ıly

ere

e a

he

ith

ici-

hat

nil-

the

of

ney

th,

-17

are

bly

Ind

ade

om

iz'd

ents

the

hey

are,

ical.

in

ural SuSuperiority of Parents, as to the Care and Pains the Parents take about their Children; and willing also that the Children should be subject to their Parents, without Exception; and trusting alfo, I believe, to their Natural Affection, gave them, not only Power to fell their Children, but also to put them to death, if they saw fit. I see no Reason to think, that Parents are, by Nature, Masters of the Liberty and Life of the Children; and if the Laws of any Kingdom make them fo, they had their Reasons probably for so doing, and ought to be obeyed: But there is no inferring that the Children of other Kingdoms, where no fuch Laws have being, are obliged to the fame Obedience: And therefore, tho' the Nations abroad had absolutely the Command of their Children, so as to dispose of them in Marriage, how and where they pleas'd; yet is not their Example sufficient to justify a Parent in doing the like, any farther than the Thing is otherwise fit among us; and Children, with 115, are not tied to fuch a strict Obedience, in this fingle Point, only because the Children of the Jews, or Greeks, or Romans might be.

And besides, Regard is to be had to the Customs of the Country. The Jews, as all the People of the East, speaking generally, did not suffer the Women to go abroad as ours do; they went to visit a Relation, or a near Friend, and that sparingly, and mixed not with common Company; which, with the Modesty peculiar to that Sex, deprived them of the Opportunities of disposing of themselves; so that their Parents

D:

only must or could dispose of them; and when they were once Married, they kept very much at home, and faw but little strange Company. The Greeks and Romans seem to have had more Liberty; but yet, as well as I can guels, not near so much as ours have. This, I take it, ought to make some little Difference; for if the Customs of a Country allow the Women Liberty to fee, and to be feen of all, both before and after Marriage, they make it somewhat more reafonable for them to choose their Partners, with whom they are to live, not in Confinement, but at Liberty; that they may not afterwards diflike their Partners, nor be betray'd, by fuch their Liberty, into new Liking and Defires of those they never can obtain. And, for the Sons of these old People, there is yet more Reason, why they should be entirely at the Disposal of their Parents, than the Daughters; and that, because Marriage was not half fo grievous to them, for they were allowed more Wives than one; and Divorces were cheap and easie; and they took great Liberties besides, with whom they could: And therefore if they like not the Condition or Person of a Wife, they either wandred from her Bed, and took unlawful Courses, (which they might do, it was fo common, without much Scandal or ill Fame) or elfe they quickly found occasion for Divorce. And therefore to be Married by their Parents, although against their Liking, and Confent, was no great Hardship; the Customs of the Nation, and the Licence of the Times, gave them

the mu ly a

the hatleve duc

and Thi Cor but

of o

low is n Exa Chr

reaf Wil ans Par

lay whe from the

they fuch tion be

with the who n

t

e

t

t,

e

-

d

1-

h

it

e

i-

2-

)-

d

n

as

re

es

i-

e-

of

d

0,

11

or

ir

1-

of

e

m

them a world of Liberty: And this made it much more reasonable for the Sons to be entirely at their Parents Disposal, than the Daughters.

But the Case of Christians is much otherwise; they have no Liberty allowed of any kind; Christ hath obliged them to love each other, and no other, even 'till Death: Each Christian Pair is now reduc'd to their original Standard, and are to be, as Eve and Adam were to each the other, faithful and kind, without fo much as hope of changing. This makes it to be infinitely more the Interest and Concern of Christians, to look they marry none but whom they love, and still intend to love, than of other People, whose Laws and Customs allowed them greater Liberties: And therefore it is not altogether fair, to urge the Instances and Examples of these fort of People too far in a Christian Kingdom; for they might much more reasonably (because more easily) submit to the Will and Commands of their Parents, than Christians in some Cases of Marriage can. And when Parents remember that their Commands are to lay Obligations on their Children, that will last when they themselves are dead and gone; and from which they never can be freed, though all the Evils in the World should happen to them; they will be cautious and sparing how they lay fuch Commands upon them, against their Inclination and Liking. However, there will always be some Difference betwixt Children's refusing, with all Submission and Respect, to comply with the Commands of their Parents in marrying fuch whom they are fure they do not love; and their marrying D 4

marrying where they will, without the Confent, or against the Commands of their Parents. The Disobedience of the one is much more pardonable and pitiable than the Disobedience of the other; because it is much more in People's Power to keep themselves free from engaging their Affections, than it is to fettle them where other People please: And to refuse to marry where commanded, is not fo likely to do any Injury, or Dishonour, as to marry against Command, is to do both or either. And yet, in Excuse of such Disobedience, as marrying of themselves, Respect and Consideration are to be had to People's Age and Condition.

The Customs of the World, and Reason, confent in giving People still more Liberty, the older they grow: They are not to be Masters of themfelves whilst young, because their Reason and Understanding are imperfect; they have not Judgment enough to confider what is good or evil for them; their Paffions and Affections are ffrong and prevalent, and always looking towards Pleasure; and they have not Consideration enough to correct or check the Disorders of their Will, and Defires: And if these be the true Causes why they ought to be subject to the Will and Commands of Parents and Superiours, whilft young, it is but fit, that as these wear off, and Reason and Understanding, and Judgment succeed, their Chains should also wear away, and their Restraint be lessened, and they should grow up to full Liberty. This, we fee, is generally allowed in fecond Marriages: The first does so emannt,

The

nathe

ver

Af-

-05

m-

or

to

ich

ect

ge

11-

ler

m-

nd

ot

or

re

ds

gh

es

nd

lst

nd

C-

nd

W

ly

1-

emancipate and free the Children from the Father's Power, that it is not accounted Disobedience, when they marry the fecond Time without Confent. Now this is not, because the Parents are no longer Parents, nor the Children tied to dutiful Obedience; but because that greater Age and Reason make Folks fitter to consider themfelves, and to look after their own Affairs. indeed a Maxim, That they, who are once emancipated and fet free, do never return to Servitude; and therefore the Children, being once freed from their Parents Authority by Marriage, come not again under their Power, as to a second Marriage: But, I believe, that Fullness of Age, Maturity of Judgment, Sobriety and Staidness of Mind and Temper, are better Reasons for Children's Liberty, and Exemption from some Commands of their Parents, than their being once married: For if a Minor marry disobediently, and be afterwards fet at liberty by his Partner's Death, whilst he is still young and under Age, whatever the Laws may do, yet Reason certainly subjects him to his Parents Power, in the Choice of a fecond Wife, as it did of the first: He is not emancipated by his first Folly and Difobedience; he still wants the Care and Tutelage of his Parents; fo that it is, at the Bottom, Age, and Discretion, and Ability to look after themfelves, which do exempt the Children from the Subjection of their Parents in Matters that are fo personal, and so much the Children's own Con-And therefore Parents are cern and Interest. especially to have regard to the Age and Wisdom of of their Children; and the Children's Disobedience, in these Cases, will be more or less excusable, as Age and Wisdom set them more at liberty.

And fometimes it will fo happen, that the Children's marrying themselves, will be in some meafure excufable by the Parents Neglect and Backwardness of taking such care, as is but necessary in many of those Cases; and therefore some Laws have left the Children wholly at their liberty to marry at fuch an Age, if their Parents looked not after it before. These, and many other Things, may be faid in Behalf of Children, either refufing to marry fuch as their Parents command them to marry, or that marry according to their own liking, against Command. And there is so much to be faid on both fides, and fo many Things to be confidered particularly on each, that it is neither fafe, nor true, to affirm, that all Parents, in all Cases, have a Right to the Compliance and Obedience of their Children; or that all Children are at liberty to marry and dispose of themselves, without their Parents; for neither of these Propositions are unexceptionably true. Parents have a great Power; but they must use it, (as truly most generally they will, and do) like Parents, i. e. tenderly and kindly: And Children have a great Duty; but they are not tied like Slaves in all Cases, and with Bonds that will last for ever: But when they do not obey, they must do it with Unwillingness, and great Reluctance; and it must be in Cases of great and lasting Moment and Concern, and fuch, as, when represented to fair and equal, wife and understanding People, they may find

fo the ge Cl an di Bi

fine

app

WO

Par

ob

Tr

th ar la th

tiv

find themselves both pitied for their Trial, and approv'd for their Refolution: That those, who would be glad that Children should obey their Parents, may fee it reasonable they should not be obeyed in these Particulars; for to say what the Truth is, the Affections of Parents are generally fo strong, and their Intentions fo good, towards their Children, that the Presumption of Right is generally on their side; and the Cause of the Children had needs be very just and righteous, and apparently reasonable and good, when they dispute or contend with Parents; because the Biass of the whole World is, with much Reason,

on their fide against the Children.

The Sum of what has been faid, amounts, I think, to this: When the certain Laws of God, and the Laws of the Land, and of our Superiours, lay their Commands or Prohibitions on them, the Parents have nothing to do but to forward the Obedience of their Children; they are not to injoin them any thing prejudicial to the Obligations they lie under to God and to their Country, nor to command them in Opposition to them: And when they do, they are not to be heard or understood; the Children are to go on steadily in their Duty to both, and to mistake their Parents Orders, with Submission and Respect, and Tendernefs. And in the Case of Marriages, the Parents are to take all due Care, to fee their Children well dispos'd of, according to their Age and Quality, and Tempers; remembring they are then laying the Grounds and Foundation of their Happiness or Misery; and not to let the Consideration tion of Fortune and Estate so preponderate and over-weigh all other Confiderations of Form and Favour, Birth and Education, Virtue and good Qualities, as to neglect them all: And when the Parents have done this, the Children are to obey as far as possibly they can; the little Objections of the Fancy, and the Niceties that are commonly made on these Occasions, must yield to the mature Deliberations of the Parents. It were best, and most to be wish'd undoubtedly, that both the Parents and the Children might choose, i. e. that each should approve the other's Choice: And that, as Homer fays of Penelope, she might be bestowed by her Father, upon whom she pleas'd, for otherwife they will not both be easy: And when that comes to pass, the Authority of Parents, and the Duty of Children, are both fecur'd and reconcil'd.

But if this will not be, there will go near to be some Fault on one fide: If the Parent offer what the Child cannot possibly assent to, and what the Neighbourhood, and wife and unconcerned Persons blame, condemn and reject, upon a competent and reasonable Information of the whole Proceedings; if fuch Refusal of the Offer be made with Decency, and great Humility, upon the Children's part, it will not fall under the Head of finful Disobedience: They may stand off with Innocence and Safety, and yet may honour, as they ought, their Father and their Mother. But if fuch Offer be made by the Parents, as a wife and good Man, in the like Cafe and Circumstances, may make, without Folly and with-

wit

wi

Ch

for

AI

ly

of

th

01

I

nd

nd

11-

21-

as

of

ily

a-

At,

1e

at

d

l,

without Injury; and there be nothing handsom or material to object, and fuch as would fatisfy a wife and fober, and impartial Man; the Duty of Children fo refusing will not be fafe; they must, for ought I fee, obey their Parents in these Cases. And if Children, who are under Age, and wholly in their Father's Cuftody and Power, and Part of his House and Family, will venture to engage themselves, without the Consent, or against the Commands of their Parents, to their Dishonour, or their Prejudice, they will be guilty of finful Disobedience, and must seek the Forgiveness they will want, both at God's, and their Parents Hands. How far Obedience in these Cases is also due to the Mothers, by vertue of this Commandment, both whilst the Father lives, and afterwards; I intend, if it please God, to shew, with other Particulars, in the following Discourse.

DISCOURSE III.

EXOD. XX. VERSE 12.

Duty of Children to Parents.

Having shewn the Necessity there is, That Children should be obedient to, and govern'd by their Parents, in all Things, where they are at liberty by the Laws of God, and of their Country, and in common Sense and Reason ought to be at liberty; I am, before I leave this Head, to speak a little to the Authority of Mothers, and to the Obedience that is due to them, both whilst

the

ob

dr

W

th

m

th

tl

0

tl

T

(

I

the Fathers are alive, and after they are dead. The Scriptures make no manner of Difference betwixt the Obedience, Fear or Honour, due to Parents; the Mother is still included, still expresfed, with the Father: Honour thy Father and Mother. He that smiteth his Father or Mother, shall surely be put to Death, Exod. 21. 15. He that curseth his Father or Mother, shall surely be put to Death, Verse 17. Ye shall fear every Man his Mother and Father. If a Man hath a rebellious Son, which will not obey the Voice of his Father, or the Voice of his Mother, then shall his Father and his Mother lay hold on him, and say, This our Son is stubborn and rebellious, he will not obey our Voice; Deut. 21. 18. And, Cursed be he that setteth light by his Father or his Mother, 28. 16. And, My Son, hear the Instructions of thy Father, and forsake not the Law of thy Mother: And so in many other Places, where the same Duty is requir'd to be paid the Mother with the Father; and, in truth, there is equal Reason in most Cases, why we should do so, and in some, greater. The Mothers undergo most Pain and Sorrow for them, bear all the Trouble of their Infancy and Childhood, do all they can for them, and intend them much more; have at least the fame, but generally a much greater Affection to them, and the same Interest and Concern for their Good and Welfare. And therefore, in Nature, and true Reason and Gratitude, the Children are obliged to make no Difference betwixt the Father and Mother, in their Observance and Obedience of, and to them.

But

ce

to

ef-

10-

all

at

to

115

us

01

d

n

ot

2,

it

e

But because the Father is also superiour to the Mother, both in Natural Strength, in Wisdom, and by God's Appointment; and that there is no obeying contrary Commands; therefore the Children are especially to obey the Fathers, in Cases where they have power to command, and where they cannot obey both Parents together: They must never obey one Parent to the prejudice of the other: The Father has no right to command the Children any thing undutiful, difrespectful, or injurious to the Mother; but if it happen that the Inclinations or Defires of Mothers should differ from those of the Fathers, in the Choice of Trade, or Calling, or in Matches for the Children, or other things of Moment; fo that the Children must displease one Parent by complying with the other; the Father is the superiour Authority, and must be obeyed; because both the Laws of God and Man have subjected the Wife to the Husband: She is not prefum'd to have a Will contrary to her Husband's; and therefore the Child disobeys not his Mother, who obeys his Father's Command, because the Mother is to be obedient also: And the Case is not very much alter'd, although the Father do not lay express Command upon the Child; but is passive and content, likes and approves the Choice he makes, although the Mother be wholly averse to it: In such a Case the Father is to be regarded, for he is the proper Superiour.

But when the Mother is the only Parent, then her Authority increases, and she is then solely to be regarded: But the Civil Laws do generally free the

Sons

Sons at fuch an Age, supposing them the Masters of the Family; and, by the Advantage of their Sex and Education, sit to govern, and dispose of themselves and their Assairs. The Daughters are, indeed, kept longer in Subjection, supposed to want the Care and Wisdom of the Parents longer; but growing up to liberty, as they advance in Years and Understanding. There can, indeed, be no exact Rules in any such Cases; for the Wisdom of either Parent, or Children, must necessarily make some Alteration in the measures of Obedience, in respect to some Commands which relate so nearly to the Children, as Mar-

riage especially does.

And even in Cases where the Sons and Daughters may be reasonably presum'd at liberty, and would otherwife take and use that liberty; yet, unless it be a matter of great moment, it should not easily be ventur'd on, to the Mother's great Sorrow; for the Grief of Parents is not to be occasion'd cheaply and lightly; much will be suffered by a dutiful good-natur'd Child, before he will afflict and grieve his Parent: And fince this is especially the Infirmity and Feebleness of Mothers, the Children are oblig'd to greater Care and Circumfpection in their Behaviour towards them, to prevent their Sorrows; for every thing that gives them Grief, is a fort of Disobedience. I will end this whole matter with forewarning Children of what will certainly come to pass; and that is, that they will never be able to remember any Act of Disobedience to their Parents, without much Trouble and Remorfe, without great Sor-

v of Ser ls or about the

row

tinu

Spir

had

and

Def

Sori

is S

con

com

ing

that

Dec

Fat

who

nou

An

or k

ma

the

for

tea

the

and

it

row

row and Concern of Mind: It will dwell continually upon them, and haunt them like an Evil Spirit; they will wish a thousand times, they had behav'd themselves more dutifully, kindly, and obediently; and rather gone without their Desires, than have occasion'd any Trouble or Sorrow to their Parents.

f

d

S

The last thing that Children owe their Parents; is Support and Sustenance; and this is evidently comprehended under the word Honour. God commanded, (faith our Saviour, Matth. 15. 4.) saying, Honour thy Father and Mother; and he that curseth Father or Mother, let him die the Death. But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his Father or Mother, it is Corban, i. e. a Gift, by what soever thou mightest be profited by me, and Honour not his Father and his Mother, he shall be free. And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his Father or his Mother, as it is in St. Mark 7. 12. God commanded the Fews to honour their Parents: But the Scribes and Pharifees, by their Tradition, had fometimes made the Command of no effect, by teaching the People, that if once they had devote their Estate to God's Service, or to the Service of the Temple, either to purchase Wood, or Frankincense, or Doves, or any thing used about the Altar, if they had confecrated their Estate to Holy Uses, they were thereby discharged from fuccouring their Parents, when they came to stand in need; so that if either Father or Mother came to want their very Bread and daily Sustenance, the Children might refuse it them, and fay--- No, it is Corban; that, by which which thou mightest have been profited by me, is a Gift: The Estate, wherewith I might have fuccoured and supported you, is Corban, it is devoted to the Service of God and his Temple; and I may not facrilegiously take away ought devoted to Holy Uses, to feed my Parents: And thus, faith Christ, you make void a certain Command of God, by a Tradition of your own, and fet the Children free from honouring their Parents: Which he expresses in St. Mark, Thus ye suffer them not to do ought for their Father and Mother. From whence it appears very plainly, that to Honour Parents, comprehends the fuccouring and fupporting them, under their Burthens and Necessities; and that this fifth Commandment certainly enjoyns the doing fo to all So the word Honour is taken in the I Tim. 5.3. and 17 Verses. Honour Widows, that are Widows indeed; i.e. Let the Widows, who are in want, and behave themselves soberly and discreetly, and chastly, be reliev'd and maintain'd amongst you. And let the Elders, that rule well, be counted worthy of double Honour, especially they who labour in the Word and Doctrine. Let the Ministers, that perform their Duties well and wifely, as they should, be accounted worthy of a Maintenance better than ordinary: Not that the Jews were at all inclined to be unnatural to their Parents, or to deny them what they wanted; but that such a Doctrine might constrain them to be so, if believ'd: And our Saviour's Discourse is particularly directed against the corrupt Glosses and the false Traditions of the Scribes and Pharifees. The

to to to Sayi your your must tion, Four Child they when Child might

unna

or F

coul

then

fable
B'
Civi
in for and
Parely, fa
Bod
And
cipa
yet

retu to b

dee

it b

me,

ave

de-

ole;

de-

And

om-

wn,

heir

hus

and

nly,

fuc-

Bur-

om-

all

the

that

who

and

ain-

rule

cial-

Let

and

thy

that

1 to

ant-

rain

ur's

cor-

the

The

The Fews were remarkably kind and tender to their Parents in Distress. It was a common Saying with them, You must Honour God, with your Substance, if you have it; but you must Honour your Parents, whether you have it or no, for you must beg for them: And more than that, you must work, tho' it were in the publick Houses of Correction, to help your Parents. This, I believe, was the Foundation of the Parents Power to fell their Children; it must be, either when they knew they could not be maintain'd but by fuch Sale, or when they could not themselves maintain their Children; and therefore fold them, that they might live. The Practice is too barbarous and unnatural, to be supported by any other Ground, or Reason; nothing but such extream Necessity could make it tolerable: Such a Power is not then strictly just; but the Exercise of it is excufable, because 'tis unavoidable.

But all these things are determinable by the Civil Laws of Nations; and therefore they differ in feveral Countries: But all agree in exacting and commanding the Relief and Sustenance of We must Honour our Parents exceeding-Parents. ly, faith Hierocles, affording them the Service of our Bodies, and the use of our Wealth most chearfully. And amongst the Romans, if a Son were quite emancipated and free from his Father's Government; yet if his Father came to want, and were denied it by his Son, the Son, for his Ingratitude, was to return again into his Father's Service, and never to be freed again. By Solon's Law, the Son indeed might deny this Aliment and Sustenance to his

E 2

his Father, in case his Father had neglected so to educate the Son, as to have put him in a way of making fuch Provision for his indigent Parent: If he had neither put him out to any Trade, nor taught him how to get his Living, it was prefum'd the Father had in a manner expos'd him to Misery; and therefore deserv'd not the Return of Love and Kindness he had never shewn. But this was only to conftrain the Parent to look after the Education of his Children, to make them thereby the more useful Members of the Commonwealth: It exempted the Children from the legal Penalties that otherwise might be inflicted on fuch unnatural Refusal; but it took not away the Obligation the Children had, by Nature, to provide for their diffressed Parents. Even this severe Law tied not the Children to be cruel and undutiful; but intended to punish the Parents Folly and Neglect, by leaving it to the Children to deal with their Parents as they pleas'd, which otherwise they might not do, but were oblig'd to provide for them. For this Support and Maintenance of Parents, is a Thing fo naturally and necessarily due, that no Laws can tie the Children not to afford it, according to their best Abi-It would be due even to a Traitor, and proscrib'd; that is, bare Sustenance would be due from Children to their Parents, in such hard Cafes.

These are the Duties Children owe their Parents; Love, Respect or Honour, Obedience and Support of all Kinds, whenever they stand in need of it; and all of them comprehended under Honouring

nou this Mo

meider tle cou

]

ful

the

ftra tive tha cer pal dre fur-Inji be

to for Of

bic

im

ral

La

nouring them, all of them injoin'd to Children in this Command —— Honour thy Father and thy Mother.

But because the Case of going to Law with Parents, is what does fometimes happen, and yet would not properly fall under any of the forementioned Heads, and yet deserves to be considered, it may not be unseasonable to speak a little to it, before I go on to the Promife and Encouragement annex'd by God, to the Honouring of our Father and Mother.

If therefore the Inquiry be, Whether it be lawful at any time, for any Cause, for Children to call their Parents into question before the Civil Magistrate or Judge: It is to be answered affirmatively; but with many Restrictions. It is certain that Parents have a great Authority, but 'tis as certain that they may abuse it: They are not incapable of doing Injury. It is also certain, that Children are to be very subject to their Parent; but as fure also, that they are not Slaves, but may receive Injury. And whoever can fuffer wrong, may also be righted: The Laws of God do no where forbid this; and the Laws of the Land are free and impartial; they make no Difference of Persons, and know no Relation; Justice is, in this Respect, to be blind: And therefore it is certain, that, in some Cases, a Son or Daughter may, without Offence of God's Law, appeal to the Laws of the Land, against their Parents.

In case of Alimony, if the Parent be so unnatural as to deny the Child its Food and Rayment, the Remedy at Law may be justly implor'd; and

no

Ho-

way rent: , nor

ed fo

preim to irn of t this r the

heremonlegal

d on y the proevere d un-

Folly n to hich

lig'd and rally

Chil-Abi-

and d be hard

Pa-

and need

ring

no one would charge, with undutiful and difobedient Carriage, a Child that should implore Asfiftance in fuch Case. So if a Parent should so cruelly use a Child as to difmember it, or make it lame, or do it any other lasting Mischief, the Child might very justly make the Case known to the Magistrate, and beg his Fayour and Assistance. In these, and such like Cases, the common Sense and Pity of Mankind would teach us, that fuch Complaint were not a Breach of Children's Duty to Parents, but very confiftent with it. And yet this is one Way of Children's going to Law with their Parents. But here, the Occasion must be, we fee, exceeding great and preffing, and vifibly, to wife impartial People, reasonable and just. It is not allowed to make even these Complaints, upon any flight Mischief; it must be sharp, and very near intolerable, before the Children must appeal to Magistrates: For though there are no positive Laws; yet Reason, Custom, and Consent of People, give fuch Power of Castigation and Correction to Parents, that the Laws forbid to any one besides; presuming always, that the Occasion will be very just, and the Provocation very great, when the Parents proceed to much Severity; the Laws still trust, as well they may, a great deal to the Parental Kindness and Affection: And yet they fee fometimes, that there is need of interpofing their Authority, and hindring Paffion from proceeding to Extremities. And, in all fuch Cafes, the Children are to ask for nothing but Relief and Ease to themselves; no Hardship, Penalty or Punishment, is to be sought for, to the Parent,

deed their havi from Tro

and rita Ma to just Ma to ob. one car an be Ai be be th VI VE lu ti fc C

12

by them; that would be impious Cruelty indeed: No Thought of Revenge must come into their Minds: They will be miserable enough in having fuch Parents as will provoke them to fly from them, for Succour, to a Stranger, without the Trouble and Uneafiness of seeing them miserable,

and fuffering any Evil.

obe-Af-

cru-

e it

the

n to

nce.

enfe luch

uty yet

vith

be,

bly,

It

nts,

and

nust

no

ent

ind

to

Dc-

ery

ty;

eal

*y*et

00-

m

a-

ief

or

it,

y

And as for Matters of Contract, Estate, Inheritance or Money, it must not be for any small Matter, nor for a light Injury, nor any Thing easy to be born, that a Child can implead his Parent; the Hardship must be near intolerable; the Injustice great and pressing, when a wise indisferent Man, or a Man's own Conscience can permit him to go to Law with his Father or Mother. We are oblig'd, as Christians, to bear somewhat at every one's Hands, and little Injuries are the least we can forgive to one another. And common Senle and Reason will tell one, he is certainly oblig'd to bear more from a Parent, than from any other: And therefore the Provocation and Necessity must be exceeding great and violent, when it is not to be passed over with Patience and Submission by the Children. It should therefore be plain and visible to all considering People, that the Parent is very much in the wrong, doing a manifest Injustice, violating the Laws of Nature, and putting off the Parental Love and Tenderness, before a Child should publickly contest at Law: The Neighbourhood, and World around, should be convinc'd of the Parents Iniquity, and fee the Injury intended, or done, to be intolerable, and fee withal the Necessity of seeking Redress at the hands hands of Publick Justice, before the Children do it. Publick Fame should go before, and prepare the Minds and Ears of all that shall hear it; so that every one should pity the Children's Case, in having to deal with so injurious Parents, and be concern'd to wish them Success: By all which, I mean to say, that the Justice of the Children's Cause must be notorious, and the Injury done them manifestly great, and grievous to them, before they are permitted, by their Duty, Decency, and Religion, to go to Law with their Parents.

The Duty, indeed, is somewhat altered in the Case of Mothers, when they hasten to second Marriages, apparently prejudicial to their Children. The Necessity of going to Law with them, is more frequent and more urgent than with Fathers, or with Mothers still continuing in the State of Widowhood; because they seem to have translated their Affection and Interest to another Family; and most of the Comforts and Conveniencies arifing from fuch contested Money or Estate, go to strange People, to whom the Children have no Obligation: And therefore that Piety in Children, that would permit the Mother to enjoy, in Peace and Quiet, what was perhaps in Justice none of her's, need not sometimes be scrupulous of recovering it from her, fince she herself would have the least Advantage by it; but it would go to utter Strangers.

While she continues in a State of Widowhood, she is their Mother still, and they are all of one Piece and Family; she is presum'd to intend nothing but their Advantage, and all she has is

look'd

P

po fit

te

tl

n

B

il

n do

pare

; 10

e, in

d be h, I

en's

be-

ncy,

the

ond

em, Fa-

the

ave

her

ve-

or

nilhat

ner

in

ruelf

it

d,

ne

0-

is 'd look'd upon as theirs: And therefore if she, through covetous Defire, or through Mistake, or Peevishness, will needs retain what does not properly belong to her, the Children, if it can confift with their Welfare by any Means, will be content to bear with fo much Loss, or Disappointment, for the present, since it will certainly be theirs at last, rather than give their Parent an unnecessary Grief and Trouble, by going to Law. But when a new Affection, and a new Engagement intervene, then all the Prospect is disturb'd: They fee new Interests rising, and the new Wife is supposed to make herself as acceptable as she can to her new Choice, by bearing with her all the Advantages of Fortune she can get together; and in fuch Cases does, too oft, forget her Children, and her former Love. In this Case the Children are much more at liberty to pursue their just Rights, than otherwise they would be; because, as I faid, the Advantages of forbearing would not accrue fo much to the Parent, as to an utter Stranger, to whom the Children have little or no Obligation.

And yet, in this Case, the Children must consider well, and take good care, that they be not overbiass'd by this common Prejudice, That second Marriages are always prejudicial to the Children's Rights and Interests; for it is not always so, though it is too often: And therefore the Injury must be great and sure, as before, that will justify the Children in their contending with their Mother, though she has now forgot their Father's House and Family. But both in this, and all other Cases,

Cases, when the Reason is great and manifest, and the Occasion just and unavoidable, the Suit is to be manag'd with all the Care and Tenderness imaginable. Contests at Law are very seldom manag'd with ordinary and common Charity; they are full of Reproach, and full of Scandal: Few People think of any thing but vexing and afflicting their Adversaries; and therefore have their Eyes and Ears continually open to the Faults and Aspersions of their Enemies, glad to hear them represented ill, and willing to believe them so; as if they were themselves advantag'd by it. They are perpetually contriving and inventing how to lessen one another, and gain to themselves Credit, at the other's Expence: This makes the Law very hazardous, few People go out fo innocent as they enter; they begin with Desire of Justice, and end with a Defire of Mischief: They begin with Calmness, and a tender Regard to their Adversary; but proceed with Anger, and increase to Malice, and end, too often, with impatient Longings for Revenge. Thus it is most commonly, when People, that are Strangers, or little known to each the other, go to Law together. One would hope that it should not be so with Friends and Relations; but that their natural Ties of Love should lay Restraint upon their Passions, and keep them in better Order. But 'tis rather all the contrary; they try at first, it may be, to moderate and keep themselves in good Temper; but they quickly fly out into Excess, recriminate, complain of, and reproach each other, with more Sharpness and Ill-will, than other People; and, knowd

o

n

f-

ir

d

n

,

y

0

V

15

e,

in l-

O

3-

'n

d

/e

id

ne

e-

ut

e,

re

d, vknowing more of each other, they are apt to proclaim more Secrets, and consequently meet with much more Credit and Belief, and consequently do each other much more Mischief. And 'tis still worse, the nearer these Relations are to each the other; when Children and their Parents strive, there is a world of Danger of ill Consequences.

It must needs be uneasy to the Parents, to be fuspected of Injustice, and ill Design against their own Children, and to be charg'd in Publick of being so: And it must needs be uneasy to the Child, to think of striving with the Parent, and to believe the Parent ill-intentioned towards him: But this Contention does too frequently betray the Child into unkind, undutiful, and hard Expressions; and oftentimes the Parent to angry Curses, and fearful Imprecations, which both good Children, and good Parents, would by all means avoid. The Fear of Injury, and Hope of Victory, do fo exasperate People's Minds, that 'tis the Sense of these ill Consequences makes the going to Law of Children with their Parents fo affrightful: And makes it fo much more eligible to endure a great Hardship, and considerable Injury, than feek for Remedy at Law, to the hazarding so much Mischief as does frequently enfue in fuch unkind Contentions. What Joy of Victory can be to either fide, when they must be asham'd, confounded, and, it may be, much prejudic'd, whom we are tied, of all Folks living, to honour most, and do the best Service to.

But after all, let one be never so much inclin'd to favour, and secure the Rights and the Respects of Parents, as Nature, Reason, Decency, the Laws of God and Man require; yet when the Parents put off natural Affection, and have no regard to Honesty and Justice; but follow blindly and perverfly their own Humour, and will not be advis'd by wife and fober, and impartial People, to do that Right to Children which both the Laws of God and Man require, and call for at their Hands; no one can reasonably condemn the Children that implore the Affistance of the Laws and Magistrates, to get themselves redress'd: Provided they do it by Necessity, with Tenderness, and all the Respect and Honour possible, never aggravating any thing done any farther than there is need to their own Vindication; of which they must not yet be over-tender, to the Disparagement and great Blame of their Parents: They ought to be exceeding careful to conceal the Faults and the Miscarriages of them. I do not fee, but the fame Piety would have endeavour'd to cover Noah's Cruelty, or Injustice, or Perverseness, had he been guilty of them, that was so careful to conceal his Nakedness and Folly, for they are also the Shame and Nakedness of the Understanding; and such Infirmities of the Mind no less dishonourable than those of the Body, which no one likes to discover in their Parents and Relations.

It remains, in the last place, that I consider the Promise and Encouragement annexed to the Performance of this Commandment: Honour thy Father and Mother, that thy Days may be long in the Land, which the Lord thy God giveth thee.

ne ne

e-

y

e,

le

it

le

75

:

,

er

e

r

It is certain, that the Land here mention'd was Canaan; and therefore, that this Promife was particularly made to the Children of Ifrael. And it is also certain, that this Promise of long Life was also made to them upon the Fulfilling the reft of God's Commands, as well as this; the Book of Deuteronomy is full of this Promise: See, faith God, 30. 16. I have set before thee this Day, Life and Good, Death and Evil: In that I command thee this Day to love the Lord thy God, to walk in his Ways, and to keep his Commandments, and his Judgments, and his Statutes, that thou mayst live and multiply; and the Lord thy God shall bless thee in the Land, whither thou goest to possess it. So in 32. 47. Set your Hearts unto all the Words which I testify among you this Day, which ye shall command your Children to observe to do all the Words of this Law: For it is not a vain thing for you, because it is your Life: And, through this thing, you shall prolong your Days in the Land whither ye go over Jordan to possess it: And so in 4.40. 5.33. Ye shall walk in all the Ways which the Lord your God hath commanded you, that ye may live, and that it may be well with you, and that you may prolong your Days in the Land which ye shall possess. So in 6.2. 11.9. 25.15. and other Places; and fo long Life is promis'd to a King that governeth well, in Deut. 17. 20. and in 22. 7. But thou shalt in any wise let the Dam go, and take the Young to thee, that it may be well with thee, and that thou mayest prolong thy Days. And so, short Life is threatned to Idolatry in Deut. 4. 26. and 30. 18. From all which Places, it appears, that long Life is as well promifed to the

ou

W

ar

b

11

to

Performance of other Commands of God, as to this of honouring Parents: But it also appears, that by long Life is not strictly meant the living a great many Years, but the living happily and well: Long Life is accounted a Bleffing, and therefore it is put to fignify a Bleffing in the Scriptures; and in all these Places, it is as if God had said; If you will live happily, and in my Love and Favour, in the Land to which you are now going, observe my Statutes, and keep my Commandments: That will fecure to you all the Bleffings you expect, and I have promised to you, in the Land of Canaan; whilst you do so, you shall continue Masters of your Enemies, and live in Peace and Plenty. But if you fall from your Duty and Obedience, then I will give you over into the Hands of your Enemies, and you shall no longer live in, and enjoy this good Land, but be delivered over to Captivity: I denounce unto you this Day, that ye shall surely perish, and that ye shall not prolong your Days upon the Land, whither thou passest over Jordan to go to possess it: Deut. 30. 18. The Jews themselves understand it no otherwise than of being in general bleffed; and where God faw convenient, he bleffed them with long Life in particular: For long Life is, of itself, no Bleffing at all; and short Life is generally no Evil, but a Deliverance from much Evil. And the short Life of Children is not fo much a Punishment to them, as to their Parents; and therefore for Children to be cut off, untimely, for their Disobedience to their Parents, were to afflict the miserable Parents doubly; to cause them to lose their Children, and to lose them in Disobedience. Such

Such Punishment would indeed be very proper for the Parent, by whose Want of careful, virtuous, and religious Education, the Child should become rebellious and disobedient; for then he would bear the Punishment of his own Fault; he would then fmart for his Folly, or his Neglect; and be afflicted, first, by a Disobedience, and then by an immature Death, its Confequence; both which he might and ought to have prevented. But, truly, when a Parent has been very careful to educate his Children well, and yet shall find them disobedient and rebellious, and love them notwithstanding tenderly; for such a Parent to lofe thefe Children, would look like a Hardship, and none alive but would conclude the Parent were rather punish'd than the Children; for tho' old Age may be a Bleffing, when attended with other Bleffings; yet certainly for People to die young, can be no Punishment to them, because they feel no farther Mifery; Death puts an End to all their Sufferings.

And as for the Pleasures of this Life, from which they are cut off by Death; they, who live to enjoy them, know the Dead have lost nothing; for (besides, that it is no Pain to lose what they never had) the Pleasures of this Life are, at the best, but just enough to sweeten Life, and make it tolerable: Life were not worth the living without them; but they, who live not, do not want them: And if it were not for the Comfort, and the Benesit of Relations, and the doing Good in the World, a short Life were a great Blessing. The Instance, that is commonly brought to prove

the Heathens also were of the Mind, that short Life was a Punishment of disobedient Children, is that of Simoisius in Homer, who died very young, because he was disobedient, and would not support his Parents. But this Instance is much mistaken; for there Simoisius is lamented as one that died exceeding young, and lived not to make the Returns of good Children to their Parents, for all their Care and Tenderness bestowed upon He made not Returns answerable to his dear Parents; for he died very young, and was disabled by Death from doing what he would otherwise have done, if he had liv'd. It is a common Instance, and therefore I choose to disprove it, because the Heathens were not likely to make any fuch Judgment of the immature Deaths of disobedient Children, any otherwise than by reckoning immature Deaths among the Misfortunes that befel Mankind, and a Token of the Divine Displeasure; but, tho' due enough, yet no more due to that Crime than any other: And therefore, when St. Paul applies this Commandment, with this Promise of long Life, to the Christians, in Eph. 6. 2, & 3. he ought to be understood in general of being bleffed by God, some way or other: Honour thy Father and Mother, which is the first Commandment with Promise; i.e. the first Commandment of the fecond Table, and hath a Promife annexed to it: Or the first Commandment with a special Promise, (for the second Commandment hath a Promise and a Threatning too, annexed to it, in the general) that it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the Earth. His hone Enc but they to co

Sen wit Goo

be !

mif Life Ob

ftar uni Exp we fpe

ly I gin Lif Ch

but we old for

aga an Ur

any

lis

His Design is certainly to encourage Children to honour and obey their Parents, and he repeats the Encouragement God gave the Children of Israel; but he could not repeat it wholly in the Sense they took it in, because Christians have nothing to do with Canaan: But it must have another Sense equivalent, and that is, that it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live happily, and in God's Favour, and he may bless thee with the Blessings thou shalt most stand in need of, and will be best for thee; and, if that be best for thee, that

thou mayest live long on the Earth.

1,

y

t

h

le

e

r

n

is

IS

d

1-

e

e

of

-

25

e

e

=,

h

n

-:

st

1-

)-

ıt

1-

1-

ll

b.

is

We cannot therefore conclude, from the Promife annexed to this Commandment, that long Life will certainly follow upon the Children's Obedience to their Parents: We must not underfland that particular Bleffing to be certainly and univerfally fix'd to good Children: Every Day's Experience may convince us of the contrary.; for we see the most obedient, dutiful, and most refpectful Children, carried off by hafty and untimely Ends, and fuch as gave the greatest Hopes imaginable. Neither yet may we conclude, that long Life is not fometimes bestowed upon obedient Children, for it fometimes may be; it is not fixed, but it is not, to be fure, excluded. Neither can we any ways conclude, that they, who arrive to old Age, have therefore been obedient Children; for that is not likely to be true; Experience is against it in too many Instances, there is a Sinner of an hundred Years old: And therefore, from thele Uncertainties, there can be no concluding with any Safety. The F

The Encouragements that Children have from this Commandment, and its Promise, are, That if long Life be most convenient for them, all their Cafe and Circumstances considered, they may expect it; but if it will not prove a Bleffing (as truly of itself it never will) then is not God unfaithful in this Promise, if he take to himself, betimes, the best and most obedient Children; for he only promis'd what would prove a Bleffing, when he promis'd long Life; and the kighteous are sometimes taken away from the Evil to come; and then, to be fure, in Love and Kindness; and therefore long Life is not always a Bleffing, and therefore is not always promis'd, for God designs to bless obedient Children. He will hear the Prayers of their Parents; he will confirm their Bleffings: He will fometimes blefs them by extraordinary Means and Methods; and oftner by ordinary, by bleffing their Care and Labour, promoting their Industry, giving them Favour in the fight of fuch as shall be able to do them Service: He will cause their dutiful and good Behaviour to their Parents, to stand them in good stead; and recommend them to the good Opinion of others; there being indeed nothing that generally makes more acceptable to all Sorts of People, than fuch obedient Carriage. Nothing becomes the Rich and Noble better; nothing does fooner recommend the Poor and Mean to Favour and Employment, to Pity and Relief, than fuch Report of them, that they are good and helpful to their Parents in Distress. When the Son of Syrach exhorteth to be helpful to Parents, he tells the Children,

dre My not fail. wh of t Sins of . und Go blef ther whi and ever whe lasti

war

obey

Pref

the 1

and i

om

it if

neir

ex-

(as

un-

be-

for

ing,

eous

me;

and

and

igns

the

heir

tra-

or-

pro-

the

ice:

ir to

and

akes fuch Rich comoloyt of r Pa-

ex-Children,

dren, they shall find their Accounts in so doing: My Son, help thy Father in his Age, and grieve him not as long as he liveth; and if his Understanding fail, have Patience with him, and despise kim not, when thou art in thy full Strength: For the relieving of thy Father shall not be forgotten; and, instead of Sins, it shall be added to build thee up: In the Day of Affliction it shall be remembred; 3. 12. It will undoubtedly be remembred for Good, both by God and all good People. God will not only bless obedient Children here, but he will bless them with the Bleffings of another Country, of which the Land of Canaan, with all its Beauty and Fertility, was but a poor and empty Shadow; even with the Bleffing of eternal Life in Heaven, where our short Span shall be prolong'd to everlasting Ages, and where it shall be well for ever with us; where it will be our Pleasure and Reward to be perpetually loving, honouring, and obeying our eternal Parent, the great Creator and Preserver of us all: Whom let us all beseech, in the Words of the Church, to have Mercy upon us, and to incline our Hearts to keep this Law.

F 2

DIS

DISCOURSE IV.

EPHESIANS VI. VERSE 4.

And ye Fathers provoke not your Children to Wrath; but bring them up in the Nurture and Admonition of the Lord.

Having already treated of the Duty of Children to their Parents, and confidered some of the most proper Cases, in that Relation: I am now to speak a little to the Advice that St. Paul here gives to Parents, how to behave themselves towards their Children. He had spoken to Children in the Verse before, Children obey your Parents in the Lord, for this is right: Honour thy Father and Mother, that it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the Earth: And then he applies himself to Parents, And ye Fathers, &c.

I take it for a Rule, and granted, that there is no Relation in the World, either natural or civil, and agreed upon, but there is a reciprocal Duty obliging each Party. There is no fuch thing as one Man's requiring Love, Respect, Honour, Service or Obedience, from another, without being, at the same time, oblig'd to do him some good Turn for it, or for having already done it. God is not indeed a Debtor to any Man, but the Thing at the Bottom is the same: It is for our Creation, Preservation, for all the Blessings of this Life, and for the Promises and Hopes of a better, that we owe him, and are call'd upon to pay him,

Ho-

How

hi

to

fre

OV

ye

Pr

vi

fir

re

D

hi

ar

th

be

ſp

di

ar

ex

af

ac

W

no

tı

ath: 0111hilme am aul lves hil-Pa-Faand ape is ivil, uty g as Sering, boc iod ing on, ife,

hat

im, 10-

Honour and Service, Praise and Thanksgiving. Without those, he would have no Right to these; we need not fear to fay fo. We should not praise him, but for the Good we have receiv'd; nor pray to him, but for the Good we expect to receive from him. Now though he does not antecedently owe these Favours and Bleffings to Mankind, yet it is necessary that he do them, before any Obligation can be laid on Mankind, to pay him Prayer or Praife, Honour, Service or Thankfgi-There is therefore nothing more certain than this, that as all Duties and Relations are at first founded upon Benefits hoped for, or already receiv'd; fo no one can require any Thing, as a Duty, at another's Hands, without having oblig'd him, or intending to oblige him, by fomething answerable to what he asks. And therefore, tho' the Parental Relation may feem, of all others, to be most at liberty; yet the Truth is this, that all the Right and Claim they have to the Love, Respect, the Service and Obedience of their Children, is founded on the Love they shew them, and the Good they do them, according to their Understanding and Ability: And therefore, if Parents, out of Cruelty or Wantonness, should expose their new-born Infants to the Rage of wild Beafts, or throw them into Rivers, and they should afterwards escape by good Providence, they might account those People for their Parents, if they would; and they might pay them, but they would not owe them, Love, or Honour, or Obedience: Their barbarous Usage cancell'd the Bond of Nature, and left them under no other Obligation to

their Parents, than to Strangers. No Body can affign a Reason why these Parents should require or expect any Duty at these Children's Hands: For, as for the Being they may be faid to give them, they took it away as foon, and cruelly, as

they could.

I only mention this, to make it very evident, that the Obligation of Children to love, honour, respect, and obey their Parents, is founded originally upon the Parents Love and Care of them; and to shew, that no one can require any thing from another as a Duty, to whom he does not allo owe fomething by way of Duty. This is neceffarily to be premis'd, not only when we are confidering the Duty of Parents to their Children, but to be kept in mind, in confidering the Duties of all Relations elfe, whether natural or civil; for, in all Relations, each Party is mutually, tho' differently, oblig'd to each the other. As therefore, Children are oblig'd to honour their Parents; so also are Parents oblig'd to look after, and take care of their Children. But because, in affigning feyeral Reasons why Children are oblig'd to honour their Parents, in all the Senses of that Word, I found occasion to instance in most of the particular Cases, where Parents are oblig'd to shew their Love to, and to perform, indeed, their Duty to their Children; I am at liberty to consider the Words of the Text only, which contain but one Part of the Behaviour of Parents towards their Children: And that is, Not to provoke their Children to Wrath, but to bring them up in the Nurture and Admonition of the Lord. We are therefore

fore Chil fhor brin the .

ł drei con up nee No vol for and the Aa not tho Pa fel Wa vif or

> th re ev W

m

VE to ha

in n 7 can

quire

give

, as

ent,

our,

rigi-

em;

not

ne-

are

ren,

ties

vil;

ho'

re-

ts;

ke

ng

10-

rd,

ti-

W

ir

fi-

in

ds

ir

r-

fore to see, in the first place, what it is to provoke Children to Wrath; and in the second, why Parents should not do so; and, lastly, what is meant by bringing them up in the Nurture and Admonition of the Lord.

First, What it is for Parents to provoke their Children to Wrath. To provoke any one to Wrath, is commonly understood, to irritate and stir them up to Anger; whether the Provocation be just or needless, whether with Reason or without it. Now Parents are not here advis'd never to provoke their Children, or to stir them up to Anger; for that may not be in their Power to prevent, and fometimes they will unavoidably do it, whilft they discharge their Duty to them. It is said of Adonijah the Son of David, that his Father had not displeased him at any time, in saying, Why hast thou done so? But this is no Example for other Parents, unless their Children so behave themselves as not to need Check or Reproof. Solomon was a great deal wifer than his Father; and he advises Parents never to regard the Cries, the Pain, or Grief of their Children, under their Punishments, when there was just Occasion, or when they were in danger of Miscarriage. When Parents see their Children in hazard of falling into evil Courses, they are not to stand considering, whether what is proper to reclaim them, and prevent their Misery, will grieve or anger them, but to venture that, and do their Duty. They are to have regard to what they intend should, and what in likelihood will follow, and that is Amendment; and not to how it will be taken at their hands.

ria

the

to

ne

700

hands. They may herein look up to God the Father of us all, who chastens us for our Profit, that we may be Partakers of his Holiness. And yet he understands and knows, that no chastening for the present seemeth joyous, but grievous; nevertheless, afterwards it yieldeth the peaceable Fruit of Righteousness to them that are exercis'd thereby. The Good of Children is what the Parent is to regard; and though the Method of procuring that may stir up all the dark and wrathful Spirits that the Children have, yet is it not to be declin'd on that Account; the reasonable Hopes of its yielding the Fruit of Goodness and Amendment, afterwards, to them who are exercis'd thereby, will justify what they do. Such a Restraint, Reproof, Admonition or Correction, as is in Reason and all Probability likely and proper to procure the Amendment of Children, though it will certainly provoke them to all the Anger and Impatience possible, is not here advis'd to be forborn by Parents, when they are bid not to provoke their Children to Wrath. The Scripture, which commands fuch Courses to be taken in many Places, does not, in any, advise them to be forborn: And therefore the just Exercise of the Parental Power is not restrain'd by any means, in these Words, for fear of making the Children a little uneafy.

But because there were some Parents in St. Paul's Time, as there are some in all Times, of a most hard, inhumane Temper; and others, who think they have, by Nature, Authority to say, and do, and use their Children, as they please, and thereupon are perfect Tyrants and Barba-

rians;

e Fa-

that

et he

s, af-

eous-

booi

and

ftir

the

ding

ter-

will oof.

lall

the

nce Pa-

bil-

nds

oes

nd

wds,

St.

of

rs,

y,

е,

2-

S;

rians; and others, who think it always, and in all Cases, absolutely necessary to deal ruggedly and and severely with their Children; because of these People, it neither was, nor is unnecessary to lay some such Command or Injunction in general on them, as this in the Text, Fathers provoke not your Children to Wrath: And then, the provoking to Wrath, signifies the provoking them by constant, hard, and evil Usage, to such a Degree of settled Anger, as will certainly end in Hatred.

The Parental Yoke is, naturally, of all others, the most light and easy: When God himself would express his Love and Tenderness to Mankind, he can do it no way, more feelingly, than by calling himself our Father, and letting us know he treats us as Parents do their Children: And when we would fet out the Care and Tenderness of one Man to another, to the highest, we can go no farther than to fay, he us'd him as a Father would his Son. And indeed, all Admonitions and Injunctions to Parents, to use their Children kindly, and with Gentleness, seem to be directed to a very small Part of Mankind: St. Paul spake these Words, Fathers provoke not your Children to Wrath, but to a very few. And, I believe, that we, who now and then use them on these Occasions, can apply them to very few also: No, the Biass of Nature is to the other way. But to those few, to whom they are applicable, it may be fit to fay --- Parents, shew not your selves too hard, austere, and rigorous to your Children: And that for these Reasons (which was the second Thing

Confequences of fuch Usage.

First, Because it is unnatural in itself. It is not doing as other People do; nor, indeed, as most other Creatures do: It looks as if you did not belong to Mankind, not to feel the fame Affections, and to shew the same Kindness, that other Parents do. 'Tis manifest, that your Children are not as happy as their Fellows are; they are prejudic'd by being descended from you, and do not partake of the common Lot of Kindness with other Children, And what Reason is there that they should be more miserable than others, if it lie in your Power to make them as easy? A Man is bound to be as good and kind to all the World, as he well can; and 'twere a weak thing, to think he has more Authority and Liberty to deal ill with his Children than with other People. For though a Man is allowed to do that with his Children, which he may not do to Strangers; yet that is upon Prefumption always, that it will tend to the Children's Benefit, and for that Reason the Laws of God and Man have left the Children to the Parents, and will not punish them for doing that to them, which would be punished if done to Strangers: But neither of those Laws allow the Parents to do any thing, truly injurious to the Children; and Nature gives them no fuch Power: She only gives them Power to do them all the Good they can, and only allows them the Liberty of hurting them, and afflicting them for a time, in order to their Good. And therefore, where a Parent's

is like just An dee rity fer

ren

off mi rit he

Po

m

ger

rit

le: C pe A

an to

fc

C

t

un-

evil

not

nost

be-

ons,

nts

t as

by

of

en,

be

ver

as

n;

ore

il-

an

he

·e-

il-

of

a-

to

n-

a-

1-

le

d

of

n

-

rent's Conscience tells him, that the Affliction he is laying upon his Child, is neither design'd, nor likely to do him any Good, it tells him he has no just Authority to do it; it tells him he is unnatural. And though no humane Laws must, or ought, indeed, to prevent or take Cognizance of such Severity (unless the Commonwealth be found to suffer by it) because they would thereby be in danger of hindring Parents of exercising a just Authority, on reasonable and necessary Occasions, over offending Children: Though the Laws, I say, must not take notice of these unnatural Severities; yet the Man cannot choose but know, that he is cruelly injurious all the while, and usurps a Power which does not naturally belong to him.

A Parent therefore must take care, that he mistake not the Silence of God's Word, nor the Liberty that Humane Laws must unavoidably leave to Parents in the Management of their Children, nor his own severe and rugged Temper; that he mistake not these for the Power and Authority that Nature gives him; for he may be unnatural to his Children, tho' God's Word prescribe him no Rule how far he may proceed, and tho' Humane Laws will allow what he does, and tho' his own Temper incline him naturally to cruel and inhumane Courses; a Parent may be unnatural for all these; and may be punish'd by our Common-Parent, for such unnatural and cruel Usage.

But Secondly, Parents are to be warn'd against too great and constant Severities, because of the evil Consequences of such Usage. First, it dis-

courages

courages them strangely, and breaks their Spirits; they have no Heart to fet about any thing; when they perceive that all they fay, and all they do, is ill understood and ill taken, they have no List or Courage to go on. They find it is much the fame, whether they endeavour to please, and do their Duty, or not; they still receive the fame Treatment, and meet with the like unkind fevere Usage. And therefore when St. Paul is giving the same Counsel to the Colossians, as here he does to the Ephefians, he subjoyns this as a Reason--Fathers provoke not your Children to Anger, lest they be discouraged, 3.21. lest the perpetual faulting, and reproving, and correcting them, reduce them to an utter Despair of pleafing them; and thereupon they fink, and become heartless, and faint in Spirit, under their Oppression. Oppression will make a wife Man mad, as Solomon fays; and constant Misery and Painfulness of Mind will break a tender and ingenuous Heart, tho' the Sufferings of the Body be not very great.

There is naturally a Defire in all Inferiours, to render themselves acceptable to their Superiours; and this is visible in young People most especially, with regard to their Parents: But this Alacrity and vigorous Desire dies by degrees, when they perceive all their Endeavours to that purpose fruitless; it is the Hope of Succeeding, that is the Life and Spring of all Attempts; and when that fails, Desire it self languishes. When young People do all they can to win the Affections of their Parents, and find them still morose,

and

and

mo

tir

de

fec

TI

he

di

u

th

de

b

h

ai

d

a

Spi-

ning;

they

re no

nuch

, and

the

kind

ul is

here

as a

An-

per-

ting

lea-

me

Op-

ad,

lin-

ge-

be

to

rs;

al-

la-

en

r-

at

d

n

and fharp, austere, untractable, and never to be moved; it is but natural to think, they should be tir'd, disconsolate, and faint, and give up all Endeavours for the future. This is one evil Confequence of a constantly severe and rugged Treatment of young People: But it feldom stops here; it produces very commonly a flavish and a difingenuous Fear of their Parents. They look upon them as their Tyrants, and dread them, as the Slaves do those that punish them; and, indeed, a fevere and never-pleafed Parent is no better than a little Tyrant, a constant Terror to his People. This puts the Children upon mean and difingenuous Shifts, to make their Peace, or to avoid his Sight; they are never easie, but at distance from him; and therefore fly him upon all Occasions. They can never please him with the Truth, and therefore try to do it with Lies and Tricks. But this kind of Fear is so near to Hatred, and does fo naturally produce it, that I need not make them two Consequences of a constant ill Usage, for they are commonly but one. There is nothing more certain, than that those whom we constantly fear, we shall very easily learn to hate. Nothing but Love and Kindness beget Love; and nothing is more likely to beget Hate, than to be constantly ill us'd, because that looks fo like the natural Fruit of Hatred.

It is not difficult, even for young People, to discern a Difference betwixt a sudden, transient, accidental Anger, and a continual settled Disposition to Severity; they can make Allowance for Fits, though they return lightly and frequent-

ly:

ly: But when Anger becomes habitual, and Pa-

rents are not provok'd, but always ready to quar-

rel, and upbraid, and punish; then it is natural

for the Children to despair of pleasing them, and to

conclude they are the Objects of their Hatred and

Aversion; and this will too, too naturally beget

a Coldness and Neglect, mean Thoughts, evil

Suspicions, Distrust, Disregard to their Com-

mands, Contrivances to free themselves from

them, and fuch Aversion as will quickly end in

downright Hatred; for finding that in their Parents, and feeling that from them, which occa-

sions them to hate others, it will be strange if it

do not occasion them to hate them. When others

use them ill, though they endeavour to deserve well at their hands, and take all Opportunities to shew their Anger, and Dislike of them, and never let them scape either Blame or Punishment, with or without Reason, and lead them a Life vexatious and afflicting, and will not be appeas'd by all that they can do, they easily conclude, that these People hate them, and have taken such prejudice against them, as nothing can remove: And fince this is reasonable enough to conclude, in the case of any one besides Parents, what is it that forbids Children to make fuch a Conclusion of their Parents also, but a Presumption in Nature, that Parents cannot hate their Children? But this is not fufficient, if it were true at the bottom, as I doubt it is not; for if Parents could hate their Children, they could express their Hatred no otherwise than these People do; and till we can know Folks Hearts, we shall alway fions the

> time ing, the

ced for Te

the for

an W

th

ways

Pa-

uar-

ural

dto

and

get

evil

nı-

om

lin

Pa-

ca-

it

ers

ve

es

id

it,

fe

d

it

-

1

t

1

ways judge of their Affections, by the Expreffions of Words and Actions: And therefore unless
the Children are convinc'd (as they will in some
time be, for they have Reason and Understanding, and know when they do amis, and when
they are truly blameable) unless they are convinced that the Severities they undergo are design'd
for their Good and Amendment, and have a
Tendency thereto, it will signifie nothing to tell
them, that they are not hated by their Parents;
for it is all one by what name you call it, or by
what title you distinguish it; a constant rugged
and austere Usage, and an implacable Severity
will always go for Hatred with them who feel
the burthen of it.

And though Children (by which I understand those of Years and Discretion, but under the Tutelage of their Parents) though Children, I fay, will be the last, in whom this ill Usage begets Hatred, yet it will furely enough beget it in them at last; and that is a fearful Consequence of provoking Children to Wrath, both to the Parents, and the Children. A Man can hardly be easie under the known Ill-will of any Relation, or one he has much to do withal; but this Uneasiness grows up to Pain and great Trouble, when the Relation is very near: It is impossible for either Parents to hate their Children, or Children their Parents, or to think they are hated by each the other, without great Grief and Trouble; it fits so hard upon their Minds, that they are never quiet under it: If they are otherwise never so happy, yet the Remembrance of this Enmity

mity interrupts their Content, and spoils all; All this availeth me nothing, faith Haman to his Wife, recounting his Felicities, whilft I fee Mordicai the Jew sitting at the Gate. It is not what we have that makes us happy, if we think we want fomething befides; that, which a restless Envy, and unmeasurable Ambition spake by him, is fpoken inwardly by Love or Grief, when near Relations quarrel with each other; all things befides afford no fettled Peace or Pleafure, whilft that great Breach continues.

Even where the Mind of one Party (and that the injur'd and offended one) is fatisfied with the Reasonableness and Justice of his being at variance, and fees the Necessity there is of continuing his Displeasure, and that great Mischiess would arife from a Compliance and Reconciliation (and fuch Cases may very well happen, and that between Parents and Children) yet is not the Mind at perfect quiet for all this; the Voice of Nature is louder than that of Reason, and strict Justice, and beats importunately at the Heart; and there will be no lafting Rest, till all is over, and a thorough Reconciliation bring back each Party to their natural Affections, and place them in the state they were at first, and always should be.

This fore and uneasse Condition the Mind is in, during a state of Enmity, should be one Motive to the keeping and preserving Love and Friendship betwixt Relations; and fince the Hearts of Parents do fo naturally incline to Children, and Love, they say, descends, it ought to move them to the greater Care, not to irritate

them not p Hatre and f root i that ble a we o foone down Mift: eafily have what ter h are 1 are c And one mak and whe

> Rea fire Feu thof I

Pare of i to 1 Fur

and Con is

i-

e

it

1,

is

ır

t

i-gd

d

e

e

them too far by a cruel Usage; that they put it not past the power of Reconciliation; for when Hatred is once taken up, and begins to fix and fettle in People's Minds, it is very hard to root it out again. One may fooner be convinc'd, that our Aversion to a Person is not so reasonable and well grounded as it should be, and that we carry our Refentments too far: One may fooner be convinc'd of this, than we can lay them down, and amend; we cannot get out of our Mistakes so soon, as we fell into them, nor so eafily get free from bad Practice. When we have done, and perfifted fome while in doing, what we are afterwards convinc'd we had better have let alone, we are not yet at liberty; there are more things concur to keep us in a way we are once engaged in, than at first to bring us to it. And therefore it is not good to provoke any one too far, and carry matters to Extremity; it makes it fo much the harder to foften them again, and bring them to good Temper, and place them where you found them, though they may fee the Reasons of coming back, and have a fecret Defire of doing fo: And, of all Enmities and Feuds, the fiercest and the most implacable are those of near Relations.

These are some of the evil Consequences of Parents provoking their Children to Wrath, that is, of using them so ill, unkindly and severely, as to make them lofe all Patience, and fly out into Fury and Disorder, to loose the Bands of Duty and Submission, to become Refractory, hardned in Contumacy and Rebellion: The Experience Peo-

ple have themselves, and the Observations they may make from others, may furnish them with other Arguments to this purpole. I have the less Care and Concern to look after other Reafons; because it is very probable, that the Case is rare, and feldom happens; there being, in all likelihood, throughout the Christian World, twenty too fond and tender Parents, to one auftere and over-rigorous one: And as many, in the like proportion, rather undone by Softness and Indulgence, than miscarry by Severity. need not look for Arguments, or fear the want of them, where Nature is on our side; but because St. Paul supposes some, and all Ages supply us with some Instances of brutal and unnatural People, after they have heard the Reasons why Parents should not deal so over-rigorously with their Children, it is fit they should hear what St. Paul advises, and how he would have them deal with them, and that is, to bring them up in the Nurture and Admonition of the Lord; which is the last Thing to be confidered.

To bring Children up in the Nurture and Admonition of the Lord, is, according to the Letter, to bring them up in the Christian Religion, to teach them their Duty, to learn them what they are to Believe, and what to Practife; to instruct them in the Knowledge of God, and Jefus Chrift; to shew them in what Condition they are by Nature, and to what they are advanc'd by Grace; to how much Misery their being descended from to corrupt an Original had reduc'd them, and how their actual Sins endangered them yet far-

ther,

ther, lastin ali W the r myste comp of the advis ledge it is they Kinds and t them that

thing this, Ta the I breed and Wou nour and a up il them conve

of In Prom Hono

apply

lee th

ence

hey

rith

the

ea-

afe

all

ld,

luf-

the

and

One.

t of

use

us

eo-

Pa-

neir

aut

rith

ure

last

1110-

ter,

to

hey

uct

ift;

by

ce;

om

ind

ar-

er,

ther, by exposing them to God's Wrath, and everlasting Death; and what Deliverance from them all was wrought by Christ our Lord, with all the rest of the Particulars of that most merciful mysterious Dispensation. All this is naturally comprehended under the Nurture and Admonition of the Lord; and no doubt but Parents are here advis'd to bring their Children up in the Knowledge and Practice of the Christian Religion: And it is the greatest Testimony of their Love, that they can shew them, in so doing; the greatest Kindness they can do them, the greatest Bleffing, and the best Inheritance they can bestow upon them. Without this, it is a little thing to fay, that neither Wisdom, Riches, Honours, nor any thing besides, can make them happy; for without this, they will, with all the rest, be miserable.

Taking therefore the bringing Children up in the Nurture and Admonition of the Lord, for the breeding them up in the Knowledge of Christ and his Religion, the Connexion may be this. Would you, Parents, have your Children honour you, and behave themselves obediently, and as becomes them in all respects, bring them up in the Fear and Nurture of the Lord; teach them the Christian Law; let them read and be conversant in the Holy Scriptures; make them apply themselves early to that; there they will lee their Duty; there they will find fuch Lessons of Instruction, such great Encouragements and Promifes of huge Rewards, as will fecure their Honour and Respect, their Service and Obedithee to their Parents. A better Sense cannot be

G 2

found to fit these Words; but because the Nur. ture and the Admonition of the Lord seems to be let in opposition to the provoking to Wrath; and because the Words will better bear it, and that a good Religious Education in the Christian Doctrine does not sufficiently answer to provoking Children to Wrath, it may be somewhat more pertinent and proper to understand, by Nurture and Admonition of the Lord, fuch a Religious Admonition, and Reproof, and Castigation of Children, as is agreeable to the Doctrine, and good Spirit of Christ the Lord; because this Sense will also take in the other, and make the Opposition Would you, who are Parents, be honour'd and obey'd by your Children, take the Courses that are properest for that purpose: Do not think of bringing your Designs to pass, by being hard, morose, and always out of humour with them; by treating them inhumanly and cruelly; by discouraging them continually with Frowns and ill Looks, with Tauntings and Upbraidings, with Threats, and cruel Chastilements: They will not need fo great Severities; fuch flavish Usage, such daily Menaces of dismheriting and casting off, and such like rugged and illiberal Treatment as is sometimes shewn them: These things do often but inflame them, and exasperate them to greater Contumacy, extinguish by degrees their natural Piety and Affections, make them avoid your Sight, fly from you, as from Mischief; to dread you like an Executioner, shake off the Yoak, as soon as possibly they can, and if not hate, yet never love you more. They

They thefe ence thods find God Pare Spiri Way by c reaf to a Brea dati

> fide Th Per and urg

it fo fail.

> no TI th pe

ne vi ha

es y

W

Nur.

ms to

rath:

, and

ristian voking

e per-

re and

dmo-

Chil.

good

e will

e ho-

e the : Do

s, by

mour

and with

Up-

Stife-

ties;

ifin-

and

em:

uish

ons,

as

t10-

hey

re.

They will be won with better Arguments than these; you may secure their Honour and Obedience better, by more natural and gentle Methods; give them such good Instructions as you find in Holy Scriptures; remember them of God's Commands, to Honour and Obey their Parents; admonish them, from thence, with the Spirit of Meekness, to take good heed to their Ways, how they transgress the Laws of God, by disobeying their Commands, when just and reasonable; and how they shall, one day, be put to answer for the neglectful or contemptuous Breach of them.

Lay but, at first, this good Religious Foundation in their Minds, and you may build upon it for ever after; it will hold when all Things elfe fail, and it will forward all Confiderations befides; it will give strength to every Argument: This will be the readiest way to convince young People you design their Good in all Injunctions and Commands; they will see that their Parents urge no more than God commands; and have no other Interest to pursue, than their Happiness. The Reception of any Argument, the Power that either Advice or Command shall obtain, depends, in a great Meafure, upon the way and manner of propounding it: If you have once convinc'd the Party, that you defign his Benefit, you have already gain'd a favourable Attention; and every thing you fay shall be considered: But if you give him cause to suspect your Kindness, he will neglect, or coldly entertain all you shall offer. When young ones are convinc'd of the true

true Love and Kindness of their Parents, (and it is very easy to convince them by gentle Usage) they will bear with Decency and Patience a great many hard uneafy Things; Reproof, and Admonition, nay, and Punishments, will find Submiffion, and Obedience, when they can come to think, it is in order to their Good, or at least design'd for that purpose. It is not to be thought, that any manner of Restraint, or Punishment, should be, for the present, easy or well taken; a Parent is not to look for this, nor to have any great regard to it; but he is so to order them, that, upon Confideration and Reflection, they may find, that all was well intended towards them, that all their Admonitions and Reproofs, Restraints and Punishments, were natural and moderate; such as were proper for their Age, Condition, and Offence; fuch as were likely to effect Amendment, and prevent or cure an Evil; fuch as other Parents wife and tender might make use of, on the like Occasions; such as Religion would advise and justify. Such Nurture and Admonition, fuch Inftruction and Reproof, and Chaftifement as this, would look as if it came from the Lord; who never grieves us willingly, or for his Pleasure, but for Necessity, for our Amendment, and our lasting Good; and such as this would fecure the Honour and Respect, the Service and Obedience of Children to their Parents.

I have before observ'd, that when we discourse of this Matter, we speak but to a few, who are nearly concern'd: Small is the number of cruel and unnatural Parents, and therefore

few

few a

and t

ny sh

to th

ther

to th

they

Wor

doin

or fl

are

ther

very

foor

Juff

cau

tur

mo

afte

the

thi

lef

fro

ce

tia

to

cl

n

f

few are the Children who fuffer at their Hands; and therefore it will not be reasonable, that many should apply what has been said too closely to themselves, or think it their own Case, whether Parents or Children: The Children are not to think the Parents cruel or unnatural, because they have been constantly reprov'd for their evil Words or Practice; and closely restrain'd from doing any thing hurtful to themselves or others, or sharply punish'd for having done it; for these are all of them Duties to Parents, and cannot therefore be their Faults. And besides, it may very well happen, that Parents may be angry foon, and retain it long, with great Reason and Justice, when the Children think otherwise; because they understand things better, see the natural Tendency of many of their Actions and Humours, and the Confequences they may draw after them, and the Hazards and finful Courses they may engage them in; and a world of things befides, which Ignorance, and Thoughtlessness, and Inexperience, keep the Children from confidering. And they are too much concern'd in their own behalf, to pass a true impartial Judgment on the Severities they undergo; too apt to justify their own Conduct, and to conclude themselves if not entirely Innocent, yet not deserving such Reproof or Punishment. And after all that can be faid, it were much better for the World, and more reasonable, all things considered, that more Children should suffer from the Rigours of their Parents, than do, (or ever will do) than that Parents, out of Fear of offend-G 4

fage)
nce a
, and

find come least ight,

ken; any em,

they ards ofs, and

ge, to il;

ke

ene

or d-

is

offending on this fide, should be restrain'd from using such Severities, as they (who know their Children's Humours and Inclinations best) shall think convenient, and most proper; or that Children should dispute, contest and quarrel their Right, or should withdraw themselves from their Obedience, upón any fuch pretence: Of the two Evils, this, beyond Comparison, would be the greater; and therefore, however hard and heavy the Dominion of some Parents may be, I know no Remedy or Way to eafe the Children, whilft they continue under them, but a Submiffive, Meek, and Dutifull Deportment towards them: Patience, and quiet undergoing what is laid upon them, will foonest bring the Parents to Confideration and Reason, and mollifie and break their Fury, and fometimes their Hearts; when a perverse and contumacious Obstinacy will but exasperate to greater Anger and Severity: And Time at length will either vanquish their Austerity, or fet the Children at their Liberty; fo that they have not long, or much to fuffer. And therefore the' the Text is, Fathers provoke not your Children to Wrath; yet I will make an end with the Command foregoing, Children obey your Parents in the Lord, for this is right.

ten

cor

gre

In

fir

fay

vii

de

fic

W

rom

heir hall

Chil-

heir

heir

two

avy

NOI

hilft

live,

em:

up-

on-

eak

hen

but

Ind

ste-

hat

Ind

not

end

oth

DISCOURSEV.

I TIMOTHY V. VERSE 8.

But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own House, he hath denied the Faith, and is worse than an Insidel.

A Mongst other Duties incumbent upon Parents, that of making Provision for their temporal Livelihood is certainly one; and here commended and injoin'd by St. Paul, in Words of great weight and moment: If any provide not, &c. In speaking to which, I intend to consider, in the first place, the Terms here us'd; and, in the second, say something to the different Proportions of Provision for Children; because to provide, is an indefinite Phrase, and must be determin'd by several Considerations and Respects: And, thirdly, consider the Case of disinheriting Children, for whom Parents are so oblig'd to make Provision, as far as it relates to us, and becomes a Case of Conscience.

First, Of the Terms here us'd: To provide, is to take care of, and make provision for the Maintenance, the Livelihood, and Subsistence, proper to the Age, Condition and Quality of any one. To provide for our own, is to provide for such as have any Relation to, and Dependance on us; such as are more ours than any other's: And to provide especially for those of our own House, is to provide for our Kindred and Family, and those who are nearly related to us, and, in this particular Place,

Place, especially our Children. To deny the Faith, was accounted the greatest Sin a Christian could commit: Apostacy was thought to be much more heinous than Infidelity; as a Renegade is much more odious than an open Adversary, made so by Accident, and not by Choice: And therefore, to deny the Faith, is a Phrase of great Exaggeration, and fignifies the being as bad a Man, and the doing as bad things as possibly he can; though he do not actually deny the Faith, nor become truly an Infidel. For 'tis certain, that a Parent may be very negligent and careless of, and very cruel to his Children, without renouncing to his Belief of the Christian Doctrine; the Meaning therefore of denying the Faith, is the acting in Contradiction to it, the neglecting or despising its Commands.

They, who profess themselves Christians, own and acknowledge Jesus Christ to be their King and Lawgiver; they have given up their Names to him in Baptism; they are to do as he enjoyns them; they are to guide and govern themselves by his Directions, to do whatever he commands, and to leave undone whatever he forbids. all Christians are oblig'd to, by vertue of their Baptism; and they profess themselves oblig'd to do it, by owning themselves to be Christians: And therefore, when they practife in opposition to this Faith, they are faid to deny it, and to become Infidels, although they do not formally and folemnly deny their Christianity. It is as St. Paul expresses, Tit. 1. 16. They profess that they know God, but in Works they deny him, being abominable and disobedient, and to every good Work reprobate,

or

or '

the

doi

of

Per we

me Go

Te

If

Ch

fitt

to

he

hir

to Pa

fo

is

C

co

th

it

H

th

di

na

ti

or void of Judgment: And the doing thus, is therefore said to be worse than being Insidel, and doing the like, because the Unbelievers have not the same Light, Knowledge, and Understanding of these Duties that Christians have; nor is the Performance of them injoyn'd, under so great and weighty Penalties, nor with so great Encouragements to Insidels, as to the Christians in the

Gospel.

ith,

uld

ore

uch

by

to

on,

dohe

uly

be

to

of

of

to

VII

ng

nes

ns

res

ds,

115

eir

to

S:

to

ne

0-

ul

w ile

€,

or

The Meaning therefore of the Words of the Text, as applied to Parents in particular, is this: If any Parent, who professes and calls himself a Christian, neglects or refuses to make a due and fitting Provision for his own Children, according to his Understanding and Abilities, he is really a bad Man; he does in effect deny the Faith; he lets it have no Power over him; he withdraws himself from the Obedience he owes, and ought to pay, to Christs Command's, which enjoyn all Parents to provide for their Children; and he is fo much worse than an Infidel, by how much he is more obliged to make fuch Provision for his Children, than Unbelievers are, who have not the fame Commands and Laws, the fame Encouragements, nor are tied by the same Penalties that Christians are.

From the Terms of the Text thus explained, it may not be amis, before I go on to the other Heads, to observe these two Things; First, that the Faith of Christ does always include Obedience to the Laws of Christ. Secondly, that all natural Duties are tied most strongly upon Christians, by the Faith of Christ, i.e. by their professions.

fessing

fessing Christianity. First, that the Faith of Christ does certainly include Obedience to the Laws of Christ: For if People are said to deny the Faith, by acting in opposition to it, by not performing its Injunctions and Commands, and to keep, and hold fast the Faith by living up to its Rules, and conforming to its Precepts, it is plain, that barely believing the Gospel, is not the Faith that will stand us in any stead of it self; and yet itis certain, that disowning externally the Belief and Profession of Christianity, is denying the Faith, though Men should live in the Practice and Obedience of most of Christ's Commands. It was not only possible, but practis'd often, in the primitive Ages of Christianity, for Men to deny themselves to be Christians in publick, and before the Magistrates, to save themselves from Starving, Banishment, or Prisons, or Death with Torments; yet, underhand, both thought themselves to be Christians, and lived as Christians: But this was a huge Mistake, and guarded frequently against by our Saviour himself; who tells his Disciples, that they who denied him before Men, (whatever they might think of themselves, and know of their Adherence to his Laws in Heart and Practice) Should be denied by him before bis Father in Heaven with all his holy Angels; and gives them in charge to confess him openly, when they were call'd upon to do it: And St. Paul affures us, that with the Mouth, Confession (that Jefus is the Son of God) is made unto Salvation. Now it matter'd not, what these People thought with themselves, nor how innocently and virtuoully

tuo diff ten to ga

mi for m an

> fic re ti

> > tl

et

tuoufly they might otherwise live; they did, by of this verbally disowning themselves Christians, and the disclaiming that Profession, they did, to all indeny tents and purposes, deny the Faith, and renounce not to Christianity. The Scandal and Offence they and gave to the Christians was exceeding great, and o its mischievous; the Scorn, and Triumph, they aflain, forded to the Jews and Heathens; the Impediaith ments and Stops they put in the way of Converts, yet and doubting People, were all great, and occaelief fioned as much Mischief and Dishonour to the uth, Christian Name, as if they had at the same time berenounced to all their virtuous and religious Pracwas And fince whoever embrac'd Christianity, engaged to prefer the being called a Christian, and the professing that Belief, to all the Good or Evil this World could afford, to all the Profit, Pleafure and Advantage he might any ways reap, and to all the Pain and Misery he might any ways undergo; fince the undertaking Christianity implies all this, fince this is truly the Doctrine of the Cross, that all Christians make Profession of in Baptism; 'tis evident, that he who, to fave himself from either Shame or Pain, denies himself, in Word, to be a Christian, denies the Faith, and renounces to Christianity, in a most large important Article, and shall have no Advantage from Christ's Promifes, although he live a good and virtuous Life in other Respects. Now though this alone, and, of it felf, is more than enough to hazard a Man's Salvation; yet is not the bare Profession of Christianity, no nor the Belief of all its Articles, enough to secure a Man from denying the Faith; be-

pri-

eny

be-

om

eath ght

rif-

ded

vho

fore

res,

in fore

ind

ien

af-Je-

on.

ht

irfly

because it is evident he may deny it in Works, though he believe in his Heart, and confess with his Mouth, that Jesus is the Son of God: And the Reason of that is this, that every Christian is oblig'd, by vertue of his Profession, not only to believe with the Heart, and make Confession with the Mouth of the Faith of Christ, but to evidence this Faith in all his Actions, to shew it in his Life and Conversation; and that all these Things are absolutely necessary, and altogether make the Faith of a good Christian: And therefore, that neither the one, nor the other (but all together) will serve a Man's turn, or stand him in any stead. In a word, if a Man can be properly faid to deny the Faith, by neglecting and refuling to do his Duty; 'tis evident that Faith includes Obedience to the Laws of Christ, and is, without those Works, both vain and dead.

The fecond Thing to be observed is this; that all our Natural and our Civil Duties are strongly tied upon us, by vertue of our Profession of Christianity. It is very much to the Honour of our Religion, that it is wholly taken up in providing for the Security and Benefit of Mankind, even in this World; its general Bent and Tendency is to set Men at ease, and make them happy; its great Endeavour is to secure the Duties of all Relations to each the other, from want of which proceed all the Mischiess in the World. It does not leave Men to be mov'd by such Considerations alone as Natural Reason will suggest; but surnishes them with better, and lays the powerful Commands of God upon them, with the San-

ction

ction

obey

endle

thing

than

deal

who

man

to o

be.e

eft]

mo

like

fuc

Ch

W

mi

lig

fer

ou

co

D

be

be

ti

k

th

nd

is

to

on

to

it

se :

er

-

11

n

--

d

h

H

ction of great and fearful Penalties to fuch as difobey, and with the great Encouragements of endless Happiness to Men's Obedience. Now nothing can be more to the Advantage of any Man. than that all the People with whom he has to deal, to whom he has any Relation, or upon whom he has any Dependance, should be commanded by God above, to shew him Mercy; and to do him Justice; to do him all good Offices; and to fuffer none to do him Injury; and should be encourag'd to all this, by Promifes of the greateft Bleffings, and threatned, upon neglect, with the most fearful and amazing Evils: Nothing is more likely to fecure a Man's Peace and Happiness, than fuch a Fence as this; and yet this is the Fence that Christianity provides for every single Person in the World, by laying its Commands, extending its Promiles and Threats to every fingle Christian, to oblige, them to perform their feveral Duties to their feveral Relations throughout the World. This ought to recommend the Christian Religion to all confidering People, above all other Laws and Dispensations whatsoever; for the indeed it must be own'd, that natural and civil Duties fare no better, or at least not very much, under Christianity, notwithstanding all this Care, than under Judaism, or Mahometism, or Paganism; yet this is not for want of any thing in Christianity, but of good Sense and Confideration in Mankind. The Religion is not any where defective, but its Profesfors; that is still excellent and most divine, but we are fottish, wicked, and worse than Infidels. It will, one day, be more tolerable

ble for Heathens, Jews, and Turks, than unbelieving difobedient Christians. There is no Religion in the World was ever framed to make Men happy, even in this Life, like that of Jesus Christ, if it were thoroughly pursued: A Man cannot possibly be made uneasie, or miserable, or fuffer any Evil at another's hands, without the Violation of some Christian Command; which, if obeyed, would have fecur'd him.

Having therefore premis'd these Things; which shew sufficiently the great Obligation Christian Parents lie under, to make Provision for their Children, it is time to come to be more particular, and to fee what fort of Provision they are to make; which was the second Thing to be con-

fidered.

To determine with any manner of Exactness, or to any Use and Purpose, the Proportion of Provision Parents are to make for Children, it will be necessary to have consideration and respect to their Age, Condition, and Capacity. Respect must needs be had to their Age, because there is a time when Children are so helpless, that all they want, and can enjoy, must be provided for them, and it can lie on no body fo well as Parents to do it: And in this Case, Provision includes every thing that Children stand in need of; this Nature teaches, and I need not farther infift As they grow up in Years, their Quality and Condition, their Capacity and Abilities both of Body and Mind, are to come into confideration; and they must be more and more inur'd to Labour, Diligence, and Industry. It is not to be the vide Houf they and the I They plica Thir and, and tain, of P urin Prov ther give they is t and fer t duf the poc vid the

> tai let

> > an th

vid the

ibe-

Re-

ake efus

Man

Vi-

, if

ich

ian

leir

cu-

are

on-

ess,

of it

ect

cct

15

ill

or

ts

es is

st

y

0

be thought, that Parents are oblig'd only to provide for their Children, Money, Lands, and Houses, and then have done their Duty; but they must provide them with Abilities of Body and Mind, both to obtain, preserve, and use the Benefits they intend to bestow upon them: They must accustom them, whilst young, to Application and Attention to Business: These Things are necessary both to Poor and Rich; and, without them, the Poor will never be rich, and the Rich will be quickly poor. It is certain, that the Poor can never discharge the Duty of Parents well to their Children, without inuring them to Labour and Hardship; that is the Provision they are only capable of making for them, and that they are oblig'd to make. God gives their Children Health and Strength, and they must see them well employ'd and us'd; that is the Portion God enables them to give them; and the fooner they begin with them, and the clofer they purfue them to Labour, Diligence, and Induftry, the kinder they will be to them, the better they will provide for them. 'Tis certain that the poorest Parents in the World are oblig'd to provide for their Children, according to the best of their Abilities; and as certain, that they can provide for them no otherwise, than by accustoming them to Labour, and Industry; and therefore 'tis certain, that they are oblig'd to provide thus for them.

It looks, at first, like doing them no harm, to let them continue lazy, idle, and doing nothing; and many poor People are extremely guilty of this way of Education, imagining it a piece of

H

Kind-

Kindness to their Children, to let them rather beg their Bread, than put them to labour for it; a Mistake not only mischievous to the Commonwealth, but of most pernicious Consequence to their Children, the unkindest thing that they can do to them; for though it please them for the prefent, yet it entails on them perpetual Mifery, and very often untimely Death, by engageing them in wicked Courfes, the fure and ready Road to Ruine; whereas the bringing them up to Labour, and continual Bufiness of some kind or other, keeps them, at least, in a mean Sufficiency, if not in Plenty, and puts them into a Capacity of emerging out of their Difficulties, and bettering their Condition. So that I do not fee, but that poor People do really offend God, as well as injure their Children, by keeping them idle, by not inuring them most constantly to such Labours as We know that God God enables them to bear. ties them to do what they can for their Children, and they are capable of doing nothing but this for them; and therefore God hath tied them to this; and if they will not do this for their Children, St. Paul will tell them, they deny the Faith, and are worse than Infidels.

As for the richer and the better fort of People, their Quality and Condition is also to be considered in determining what kind of Provision is to be made for their Children. Custom and the Usages of the Country make many things decent and fit, which otherwise would be indifferent; and Distinction of Quality and Condition is absolutely necessary to the keeping up Quiet and Order in the

World:

Wor

Peace

ditio

Thin

Mor

Dece

confi

Thir

abso

Ord

nor

And

Thi

may

not

dea

awa

tole

Ho

tio

out

Co

for

of

In

of

T

fu

far

do

fit

D

rather ur for Comuence they m for 1 Migageready up to nd or ency, acity tterbut ellas 7 not rs as God ren, this i to hilwith, ole, erbe ges fit, if-

1e-

he d:

World: It is impossible for Mankind to live in Peace, without a due Subordination of one Condition to another: And therefore, though these Things, confidered by themselves, appear neither Moral nor Religious, but Matters of Ceremony, Decency and Form; yet whoso sets himself to confider Things throughly, will find, that thefe Things, in Conjunction one with another, are fo absolutely necessary to the securing Peace and Order; that, without them, neither Religion nor Morality could live and flourish in the World: And therefore they, who think meanly of these Things, and that Mankind is above them, are, it may be, mistaken in Mankind, and understand not Humane Nature enough; and they, who endeavour to subvert and overturn them, are not aware of the Evils that would ensue. It can't be told, in what Rank of Virtues, Decency, and Honour, and Distinction of Quality and Condition stand; but yet it is easy to see, that, without these Things, there would be nothing but Confusion and Disorder in the World. It is therefore possible for one Man to do that, by reason of his Quality and Condition, with Reason and Innocence, which another cannot do, by reason of his Condition, without Offence and Blame. 'Tis possible for a Man of good Quality to make fuch Provision for his Children, as may be truly faulty, which if a meaner Man had made, he had done well and laudably. And therefore, till Men find a better Rule to walk by, in these Cases, than Decency, and Custom, and good Fame, they will

not do either well or wifely to neglect and overlook them, though I can't affign them the particular Command of God which they offend against

in fuch Neglect.

Upon these Accounts, it may be utterly impossible for any one else to prescribe to a Parenta Rule of Provision for his Children, either as to Kind, or Quantity; but it will not be difficult for him himself to do it, taking these Things into Confideration. Only let him not be unmindful of these two Things. First, that he never educate his Children above the Provision he defigns to make for them: And, Secondly, that whatever Provision he designs to make for them, he inure them to Labour, Diligence, and Induftry, to Attention, and Application, as they are capable of bearing. This is common to all Qualities and Conditions; this must go along with all Children; the poorest are not too mean for these Qualities, nor the richest above them.

First, A Parent is to take good heed that he never educate his Children above the Provision he designs to make for them; as well because it will slack en their Diligence and Industry, upon Presumption there will not be so great Occasion for them, as also that the Disappointment will be great and troublesome, without any manner of Advantage; it being much more easy to bear with a mean Condition constantly, than to fall into it from a plentiful and good one; which is the Case of People better educated than provided for: The soft and tender Usage of People, whilst young, and capable of undergoing Labour and more

Hard-

Har

out

for

the

and

Liv

the

of l

tru

tat

mu

E

fig

pre

th

th

th

hi

th

th

V

P

vericuainst imenta is to cult s inindever dethat em, dusare Quavith for he n he vill refor be of ith) it ase he ıg, re

d-

Hardship, is truly a Diskindness to them, without an answerable Provision for them afterwards; for whenever they are left to shift for themselves, they are no better than expos'd naked, as it were, and defenceless, unable to procure themselves a Livelihood, and in much worfe Condition than their Inferiours. This is the Misfortune frequently, of being born of an ancient and genteel Family, or of Parents prefum'd to be much richer than they truly are: Their Name, and Quality, and Reputation, entail upon them Milery and Want; they must be bred as if they were all to inherit great Estates, when they are to inherit nothing but a Name, that does them Mischief: This is not defign'd a Kindness to the Children, but generally proceeds from Pride and Vanity; which make the Children mean and miserable indeed, for fear 'Tis one of the Parents should be thought so. the unkindest Things a Parent can do to breed his Children up in Delicacy, and Softness, whilst they are young and strong, and then to leave them to themselves to work their Fortune out of Weakness and Folly: 'Tis very ill for the richest Parents that are, to deal too tenderly with their Children, let them leave them as well provided as they can; but 'tis great Cruelty in Parents, that are able to leave them little or nothing, to leave them Pride and Laziness, and an Incapacity both of Body and Mind to do themselves any Service; as if the Reproach and Blame, that must unavoidably fall on these unkind Parents, were not more to be respected and seared, than the Reputation of having a small Estate, and bemg H 3

ing unable to leave them a confiderable Fortune. This is apparently preferring their own Fame to the true and lasting Benefit of their Children, in a material Point, which is a very ill way of pro-

viding for them.

And these People, of appearing Fashion and Quality (though to be pitied more) are as much to be blamed, as the poorer fort, who will not inure their Children to Labour and close Application; for their Inability to provide for them, according to their Quality and Condition, will not excuse them for neglecting to do as they are able. The Effects of this unadvis'd way of Education are so remarkably bad, that 'tis a wonder Men should need any caution against it: The Menchildren either fall into the Meanness of Servitude, the Refuge of the idle and uninstructed part of Mankind, or betake themselves, in despair, to the Wars abroad, or to Robberies at home: The Women fall too often into the Hands of wicked Tempters, through want of Ability to employ themselves in honest Courses, and an utter Incapacity of maintaining their Condition; their Poverty making them unfit for their Equals, and their foft expensive Education making their Inferiours afraid to match with them, besides the hazard of bringing the Spirit of a good Family along with them.

These are some of the usual Mischiefs of a Parent's educating his Children much above the Provision he is able, or willing, to make for them, and leave them; sufficient to discourage any one from doing it, confidering how much easier

tis

'tis t fall er i Cor Gri

> not am but tion feq you

to t

Edu

fuc the or fel fta eit

or

Wi cei and Ef ve

for ful of

me Pl th

pr

'tis to advance and rise above our Hopes, than to fall from our Expectations; and how much kinder it is, to leave our Children Satisfaction and Content, if not Surprize and Pleasure; than Grief and Shame upon their Disappointment.

tune.

ne to

pro-

and

nuch

Ap-

iem,

will

ucaider

len-

rvi-Aed

de-

at

nds to

ter

nd

In-

he

ily

a-

he

n, 1y

er is

There is also the opposite Extream that is not to be forgotten; and that is, a mean and fordid Education, when they defign to leave, or cannot help the leaving them, a great Fortune. am not directly to charge this Humour with a Sin; but 'tis a huge Indecency, and piece of Indifcretion; a Thing that has often had very ill Confequences, and cannot eafily have good; for the young People, either feeing good reason to hope, or finding for certain, that they shall one day fucceed to a Fortune superiour to the Condition they are educated in, do either begin to despise, or to neglect their Business: They think themfelves above their Calling, or imagine they shall stand in little need of its Assistance; and, upon either account, flacken their Care and Industry, withdraw their Minds from their proper Concerns, and become very quickly bad Servants; and, as foon as they come to Liberty and their Estate, fall into all Extravagance, and make a very ill Use of both. In a word, a mean and fordid Education, with the Prospect of a plentiful Condition to follow, will hardly escape one of these two Extreams; either by use contract a mean and fordid Spirit, and, in the midst of Plenty, live a wretched and penurious Life, fo that a mean Estate had been sufficient and most proper; or else there will so much time be lost in H 4

the way they are in, and they will shake off their Condition, and betake themselves to loose and profuse Courses, and be undone by too great

Plenty.

A prudent Parent will therefore carefully avoid both these Extreams, of educating his Children much above, or much below the Provision he defigns to make for them; and that this may not feem to be out of the way, it is, if well confider'd, the furest means of rendring the Provision they make, most ferviceable and useful to their Children: For, by these means, the Children have Encouragement to profecute their Bufiness with Industry and Application, knowing their Parents will take care to farther them, and help them according to their Beginnings; and that fuch Help and Assistance, of it self, will not suffice, without their own great Care and Industry, which will also be a Spur on that side. They must not be wanting to themselves, no more than their Parents will be; and then their Affairs are likely to fucceed: For, if they either perceive their Parents unable to go through as they begun, they are discourag'd, griev'd and sham'd, and thereupon grow desperately careless; or able to do above what their present Condition requires, they grow, as was before observ'd, intolerably negligent, weary of their way, and longing after Liberty; which, being unfeafonably obtain'd, is commonly us'd intemperately.

This is therefore one Thing that Parents will observe in making Provision for their Children, to fit them with an Education suitable to it, to

keep

kee

the

an

fu

the

m

fic

d

T

fo

fi

e of

loofe

great

avoid Idren

e de-

y not

consivision

their

ldren

finess

their help

that

fuf-

ftry, hey

ore

fairs

perhey

n'd,

ble

re-

to-

ng-

ob-

rill

en, to

ep

keep a mean, without either over or under-doing the matter; for fince they are oblig'd in Duty to make Provision for them, they ought in Reason and Prudence to take all care they can to render such Provision the most serviceable and useful to them.

The other Thing, a Parent should not be unmindful of, is this; that whatever great Provifion he intends to make for his Children, he do by all means inure them to Diligence and Industry, to Application and Attention of Mind: These Qualities may chance to make some amends for the defect of Money or Estate, but no Provifion will fufficiently supply the defect of them: Many emerge, by these, out of great Difficulties and Straits, and make their way to Plenty and Prosperity; and many more, for want of these, decline from Plenty to much Misery; so that no Fortune is above, or can continue well without There can be no better Reason affign'd, why fo many People of Fashion are distinguish'd as much by their Vices, as their Birth and Quality, from their Inferiours, than that they are fo foftly educated, and fall into the worst of Hands, i. e. their own, so soon: There is a great deal of Care, and Time, and Money, oft expended on them; but it does not fucceed fo well with them, because they must not be press'd to any thing; they must take what they will, and never be constrain'd to any thing laborious and difficult. close Attention and Application would break their Spirits quickly, and they would never love their Business again. This is the Opinion of fond and

and ignorant People together, and quickly agreed to by the young ones, who are always afraid of being overcharg'd, as well as their Parents, and think their Hearts will break a great deal fooner than they will: A Miscarriage of this kind does feldom or never happen, if things were well inquir'd into; the Miscarriages are generally for want of this Attention and close Application. These fort of People will unavoidably have liberty enough betimes, and therefore may well bear with Restraint and Labour, before-hand, for a feafon; and if they are not taught how to employ their time in fomething fit and worthy of them, whilst they are young, they will never know how to do it, when they grow up, and are wholly Masters of it; so that the Parents, who are only careful to provide Estates for their Children, do truly forget half of their Bufiness; which is, to fit their Children for their Estates.

Now fince it is not either fit, or decent, or at least not customary, to put these People of Quality to Trades or settled Callings, it must needs be worse with them, than their Inseriours, if they have not something equivalent to such Employments, to quicken their Industry and Diligence, to keep them busied and amus'd as prostably as they can, to inure them to the Labours of the Mind, and sit them for Services that may,

in time, be proper for them.

There is no Body, but is born and oblig'd to ferve his Country in some Capacity or other; and they, who are most at liberty from their natural and domestick Necessities, whose Bodies are not

tied and fome to g they and vol Qua are the tag fit Pu are du lif

> bi th no ni ni ni

no

n v fi

i

tied

tied to labour, and earn the Sustenance of a Family, and to provide for their Relations, by following some Vocation or Employment, are most oblig'd to give their Service to their Country, because they have most Leisure, and sewer Avocations; and this the most profuse and negligent, the most voluptuous, idle and unserviceable Creatures of Quality that are, know not how to deny: They are always ready to own their Obligation to serve their Country in Offices of Honour and Advantage: But then 'tis certain, that they ought to be set and qualified to discharge those Duties to the Publick; which they can never be, unless they are bred up, whilst young, in a most diligent industrious Pursuit of such Attainments as will qua-

lify them for fuch noble Services.

reed

d of

and

oner

does

l in-

for

ion.

e li-

vell

nd,

to

thy

ver

ind

its,

eir

fs;

at

12-

ds

if

n-

li-

fi-

rs

y,

0

d

If Parents were as much oblig'd to feek their Children's Mischief, as they are to provide well for them, and were to study long for it, they could not find a more effectual Way of doing it, than by breeding them up in Idleness and Softness, leaving them to themselves, and to their natural Listlessness; neither charging their Memory, nor quickning their Invention, nor trying their Judgment, nor putting them to any Strait or Difficulty: They would, without any farther Trouble, be undone; for, under all these Prejudices, the Soul will still be active, and, not being under any good Direction, will be active to Mischief: The natural Inclinations will unquestionably sway; for there is neither Reason nor Employments to hinder them, which are the only Things we have to oppose to the Importunity of Temptations. How can I do this

this Thing, and fin against God? is an Argument of great Religion; but to be well employed, and full of honest Business, is a much greater Security, in as much as it is better to be deaf, than parly with the Devil, when he is laying Snares, and trying to corrupt us. By doing nothing, you shall quickly learn to do Evil; it is the Stair below it, and you cannot miss of stepping on it. The Senses are awake to every thing that calls; ready to entertain all evil Motions and Suggestions, comply with all Desires; and, in a word, to fall into all the Snares that are laid for them.

Now though these Matters do not look, at first, as if they any ways belong'd to making due Provision for Children; yet Experience will quickly shew, that all Provision else, without this Care, will either be to none, or to little purpose: A great Fortune will only prove a great Temptation to Folly and Extravagance, unless the Mind be fitted to it, and prepar'd to use it well and wifely: It will only ferve to expose them to the greater Scorn and Contempt, and shew their Weakness more conspicuously: So that the Kindness, Parents are so forward to express in amassing great Estates and Fortunes for their Children, will not be fo truly beneficial to them as they defign it, unless they also take more care about their Education, by inuring them to Diligence and Induftry, by accustoming them to close Application and Attention to whatever they are about, tho' mean and inconfiderable; for by these means they will contract good Habits, and be fitted for Business of greater moment, when it comes upon them,

them may tainl will whic Mea to ir to p ver : cati both and shor plac and wil reft

this cor inh the cile fci

[e]

them, and fitted to repair the Breaches Chance may make in their Estates. And that must certainly be the best Provision for Children, which will stand them in best stead in all Conditions; which will help them to raise themselves from Meannefs to Sufficiency, or Plenty, and help them to improve a good one to better, and help them to prevent a Fall, or to bear it well, and to recover it again. This is the Benefit of a good Education, being accustomed to Pains and Labour both of Body and Mind, whilst young and pliable, and fusceptible of Impressions: And therefore this should be provided for especially, and in the first place: This is to be the Bottom and Foundation, and upon this we may build whatever Good we will, for it will bear it; and, without it, all the rest will fall to nothing.

Ishould come, in the next place, to consider how this Duty of Parents, to provide for their Children, comes to be so frequently dispens'd withal, by disinheriting of Sons, and depriving Daughters of their Fortunes; how these Proceedings are reconcileable with Reason, Nature, and good Conscience, and the Laws of our Religion: But this will deserve to be considered apart, and by it-

felf.

nent

and

rity,

arly

and hall

vit,

en-

/ to

m-

nto

at

lue

vill his

fe:

ta-

nd

nd he

eir d-

ng

n,

eeir non

n 1,

DISCOURSE VI.

I TIMOTHY V. VERSE 8.

But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own House, he hath denied the Faith, and is worse than an Insidel.

Having shewn already, from these Words, the Obligation Parents lie under to make Provision of Things temporal for the Livelihood and Subfiftence of their Children, according to their feveral Ages, Quality, and Capacities; and laid down some Directions withal, how to make fuch Provision more serviceable and useful to them, by a prudent Education of them; and shewn also, how Christians, neglecting foto do, are faid to deny the Faith, by not fulfilling, but acting in opposition to, the Commands of Christ, which injoin all Parents to make a due and fitting Provision for their Children, and become thereby worse than Infidels; i. e. than fuch as believe not the Gospel of Christ, and consequently have no other Motives to the discharging the Duty they owe their Children, than what bare Reason, and natural Affection, and the civil Laws of their Country, fuggest and offer: Whereas the Christians have, moreover, the positive Commands of God, the common Parent of us all, the great Encouragement of Promises of endless and inestimable Recompences, and the Threatnings of everlasting Death to the Neglect, or the Contempt of God's Commandments, to stir them to Obedience. I

am n provi quen Sons Forti

able and t

T and all h and no o ther quir drei drei Ind best hav Lav Chi die the wh wa Aff ren

> ner dre hat

of

am

am now to shew, how this Duty of Parents, to provide for their Children, comes to be fo frequently dispens'd withal, by the disinheriting of Sons, and denying or depriving Daughters of their Fortunes; how these Proceedings are reconcileable with Reason, Nature, and good Conscience, and the Laws of our Religion, and then to make

an end of this Subject.

ly for

aith,

rds.

lake

ood

; to

and

ake

em,

lfo,

eny

osi-

oin

for

an

oel

0-

eir

f-

e,

ne

e-

e-

g S

I

That Children should succeed to their Parents, and inherit their Estates and Goods, is agreed, on all hands, by all Nations that were ever civiliz'd, and govern'd by Laws; and the Reason is, that no one hath a better Right or Claim to them, whether we confider the Labour of the Parents in acquiring them, or their Affection to their Children: For fince they love no Body like their Children, and have a Right to the Fruits of their own Industry and Labour, this Love entitles them best to their Estates, when they are dead, and have done with them: And therefore the Civil Law, (which is the Publick Reason) gives to the Children the Estate of their Parents, though they die intestate, and without any Signification of their Will and Pleasure; presuming, that they, who make no Declaration to the contrary, do always intend to go along with Reason and natural Affection, which both bestow the Estates of Parents on their Children.

But though this be very certain, yet the Manner of proportioning out this Estate to the Children, how it is to be divided among them, is, and hath always been very uncertain; most Kingdoms of the World differing from one the other, and

most

most of them, from themselves, at different times: And, indeed, it feems to be a Matter properly determinable by the Laws and Constitutions of every Country: For though we are importun'd by many loud and noify Pretences of a Divine kight of Succession, in favour of the eldest born; yet, if examin'd well, the Right of Succession will be found to be built upon prudential Confiderations only, back'd with the Authority of God's Commands to his own People the Jews. When a Child is born, the Parent fees there is one to inherit what he has, and to fucceed to all his Labours; and feeks no farther for an Heir. far is natural, that this Child should enjoy whatever the Parent leaves, and build up his Name and Family, because there is no one else to do it: But when, in time, the Parent comes to have more Children; then the Necessity of the eldest fucceeding grows fomewhat less, because there are more Children that can answer to the same Defign and End, and build up the Name and Family, as well as the eldest; and then the Necessity is chang'd into Decency and Conveniency. It is then most decent, that the elder should be preferr'd to the younger, because he was before him, and has done nothing to deferve the being cast behind him: It is reason enough that he should succeed to all the Advantages, if there be no reason to the To be born the first, is, as it were, the lucky Chance that God hath given him; the Lot, by which the Differences that might arise betwixt the Children of the fame Parents, is decided; and this is that which I call the Conveniency of

of th part found milie go a the 1 no D Blan that fhou God Add to b Hea there in th exce of (the man thei plac to in fron 21. anoi the ! be 1. mak

he 1

befo

torn

for

es:

rly

of

n'd

ine

n;

rill

ra-

d's

en

in-

a-

us

at-

ne

it:

ve eft

re

ne

a-

ty

en

to

as

nd

ed

ne

e,

ne e-

i-

cy

of

of the eldest Children's succeeding to the better part of their Parents Estates: For where that is found necessary to the raising and preserving Families, that the better part of an Estate should go along with him who is defign'd to build up the Name of the Tribe and House, there can be no Determination made with less Exception, or Blame, or occasion of Dispute and Quarrel, than that the eldest should succeed; because, that he should be the eldest, was the Determination of God, and not the Artifice or Defign of any Man-Add to this, that the elder may well be prefum'd to be the wifer, and confequently fitter to be the Head and Father of the Family; and, I believe, there will appear but little more of Divine Right in the Succession of the eldest, than of any other, excepting what is fetch'd from the Commands of God to his own People the Jews. the eldest amongst the Jews were born to many Privileges and Honours, above the rest of their Brethren, is evident from abundance of places in the Old Testament; and that they were to inherit their Fathers Possessions, appears both from Command, and from Examples. So in Deut. 21.15. If a Man hathtwo Wives, one belov'd, and another hated, and they have born him Children, both the beloved and the hated: And if the first-born Son be her's that was hated; then it shall be, when he maketh his Sons to inherit that which he hath, that he may not make the Son of the belowed, First-born, before the Son of the hated, which is indeed the Firsttorn: But he shall acknowledge the Son of the hated for the First-born, by giving him a double Portion of all

all that he hath: for he is the Beginning of his Strength, the Right of the First-born is his. So Fa. cob fays, Gen. 49. 3. Reuben, thou art my First. born, my Might, and the Beginning of my Strength; the Excellency of Dignity, and the Excellency of Power. As if the Right of the First-born were built on this. For whence also it appears, that the Right of the First-born was a Right to a donble Portion of the Father's Estate. Which is feen also, I Chron. 5. 1. Now the Sons of Reuben the First-born of Israel, (for he was the First-born, but forasmuch as he defiled his Father's Bed, his Birth right was given unto the Sons of Joseph, &c. Not that the Sons of Joseph had the Dignity or Principality above their Brethren; but that Foseph's Children were the Heads of two Tribes, which was a double Portion, the Right of the First-born. So Solomon bids his Mother ask for Adonijah the Kingdom also, for he was his elder Brother: And fo it is said of Jehosaphat, 2 Chron. 21. 3. that he gave his Sons great Gifts of Silver and of Gold, and of precious Things, with fenced Cities in Judah; but the Kingdom gave he to Jehoram, because he was the First-born. So that it need not be doubted, but that, amongst the Jews, the First-born succeeded to at least a double Portion of all that the Father had, by God's Appointment and Command; and might lay claim to it by a Divine Right: But how any one elfe, but Jews, can make fuch claim to fuch Succession, is not yet so mani-But how then can the difinheriting of Children become a Case of Conscience, if so be that the Laws and Commands of God to the Jews, in thele

these which Fews Conf Com and g nels, to th are v new Few Few ency Peop Cou fton ther obje Fev alfo doe oth mai ing mal OW the a g Wit

bec

felv

COI

of li

io Fa.

First.

ngth;

ncy of

Were

that

i dou-

s feen

n the

, but

Birth-

Not

rinci-

leph's

hich

oorn.

h the

And

at he

and

dah;

se he

ubt-

fuc-

the

om-

vine

ake

ani-

hil-

hat

, in

iele

these Matters, affect not Christians? In answer to which, we fay, that a Command of God to the Fews, neither is, or ought to be, the Rule of Conscience to Christians, any farther than such Command is agreeable to the Light of Nature, and good Reafon: And they who, through Weaknels, and an undue Application of fuch Command to themselves, think themselves thereby oblig'd, are under a Mistake, and bring upon themselves a new Yoak; for a Command to the Fews, obliges Fews only: But when a Command of God to the Hews carries its Reason, Decency and Conveniency along with it; when the wife and civiliz'd People of most Nations adopt it into their own Country Laws, and when the Usages and Customs of ones own Land run the same way, and there is nothing better and more reasonable to object to it; then such Command of God to the Fews, begins to look as if it affected Christians also: It looks, I say, as if it did, but indeed it does not; for it is, in truth, the Weight of these other Confiderations that enforces fuch Command: And because it has had the Honour of being commanded by God, Men prefer it, and make it a Rule to themselves, which, yet, for it's own fake, and without those other Considerations, they never would; as appears from our passing by a great many Commands of God to the Jews, without any manner of regard had to them, only because we do not find them reasonable in themselves, nor convenient for us.

The disinheriting of Children therefore becomes a Case of Conscience, upon these Consi-

derations,

derations, to Christians: The Christian Law commands all Parents to make a reasonable and due Provision for their Children; but because this is general and indefinite, and a Man is as much to feek, as before, what Quantity and Proportion of Provision he is oblig'd to make, therefore he looks out for a more particular Rule of Direction in this Matter: And finding that the Laws of wife and civil Nations have, at all times, generally agreed, to prefer the First-born to a considerable Share of the Father's Estate, beyond the rest, for the raifing and preferving Families, and for the avoiding many Mischiefs, and for other good Reasons; and that the Laws of God himself to his own People were the fame, and that the Laws and Customs of his own Country agree to it, and that there is nothing reasonable or material to object, or oppose, to so doing, the Conscience cannot find a better Rule to walk by; and fince it will walk by some or other, it will most reasonably choose the best, and that which is least liable to Exceptions and Inconveniencies.

Since therefore these are the Reasons and Confiderations, that induce an Obligation on the Consciences of Parents to make such a particular Provision for their eldest Children, by leaving them the better part of their Estates, they will unavoidably feel Concern and Trouble when they offend against this Rule, without sufficient Caule and Reason; such Cause and Reason as wise and civil Nations affign and allow of by their Laws

and Customs.

The

The

justify

great

derab

heen

difinh

to be

Viole

with

The

this

poffi

with

ther

mig

be I

but

Ra

allo

dic

be

lie

So

gl O

W

comd due this is ach to ortion ore he ection Ws of erally rable t, for r the good if to Laws and obnnot will ably Exononro-

em naofufe nd

ie

WS

The Causes, that are commonly affign'd to justify Parents difinheriting their Children, are a great many: I will only mention the most consi-And, First, the striking of Parents has been all along efteem'd a fufficient Cause for the difinheriting and cafting off Children: Therefeems to be fo much Undutifulness and Impiety in such Violence, that one cannot hear of fuch an Action, without defiring and affenting to its Punishment. The Ancients allowed but of two Excuses for this Crime; the one was, when they could not possibly avoid a huge Mischief from their Parents without firiking them: It must be in defending themselves; and that not from a small Correction, or a little Suffering, but from some Blow that might endanger them; fome Evil, that could not be prefum'd to be intended by a Parent to a Child, but might be the Effect of a blind and unadvised Rage: In such a Case it was excus'd, rather than allow'd, if a Child should strike his Parent: They did not, for this Misfortune, think he deferv'd to be undone, and difinherited; because they believ'd the Parent himfelf, when he recover'd his Sobriety of Mind, and usual Calm, would be glad to find a great Mischief prevented by such Opposition. The other Excuse, of Children wounding or striking Parents, was; if it were done in fighting for, and defending their Country: The Ancients preferr'd the Liberties and Safety of their Country to all other Confiderations whatfoever: If we do not fo too, it is not that we have either more Reason, Honour, or Religion, than they had; but a more contracted, narrow,

row Mind, and Interest, to think on. If it had happened that a Father took part with the Ene. mies of his Country, and in Fight were met and wounded by his Son; the Father afterwards might not, for this, bestow his Birth-right on another; he was not hereby prefum'd undutiful or impious, nor to be punished as fuch: The Duty he ow'd his Country was antecedent to, and greater than what he ow'd his Parent; and the Parent was in a wrong Place when he fuffered at his Hands, And yet, for any Cause besides, or upon any other Account than these two, the Children might not touch the Hair of the Parents Head, nor lift up an Hand against them, without falling from all the Right and Advantage their Birth and De-

fcent might entitle them to.

Another Cause, that justified the Parent's disinheriting his Child, was, the being found to have contriv'd his Death by Poison, or other secret Method; the having laid Snares to intrap him into any Mischief: He was deservedly thought unworthy to receive any Benefit from the Parents, who had contriv'd, or was privy to any Design of doing them any Mischief, not only to the taking away their Life, but to the hurting them in Body or Estate. Nay, if the Children did but accuse their Parents of any Crime, by which they were brought into hazard of either Banishment, or Mutilation, or of losing their Lives, and the Parents were acquitted, if the Children did this voluntarily, and without Constraint, the Parents might justly disinherit them, and cast them off, altho' this Accusation were of a Crime committed against

agau tion only Mile War ter i fatio thin evel vinc evic ver are Int

are ting Du ren wh im to vil

in W do by

> na he

W CC t had

Ene,

t and

night

ther;

ious,

ow'd

than

as in

ands,

ther

not

t up

all

De.

ifin-

Me-

into

un-

nts,

ing

ody

use

ere

lu-

nts

ta-

ht

10

ed

against the State: And that, without Contradiction to what has been said before; for a Child is only authoriz'd to oppose the Parent, even to his Mischief, when he is openly and manisestly in War against his Country; but not when the Matter is only suspected, and not prov'd, as in Accusations it is not: For Children are presum'd to think the best of their Parents, and to construe every thing in their favour, and not to be convinc'd, when it is against them, but by plain and evident Matter of Fact: And therefore an Accuser of his Parents has been all along look'd upon as a malicious, odious Creature, and therefore very sit to be cut off from all their Favour.

These Things touch the Parents Person, and are immediately the Effects of the Children's ill Intentions; they are concern'd in them: There are other Causes that justify the Parent disinheriting Children, when they are only negligent of their Duty, either carelessy or designedly; when the Parent falls into Frenzy, or any fuch Difability; when he is taken Captive by Enemies abroad, or imprison'd at home; if the Child neglect either to look carefully after him, and to make due Provilion for him; or to get him let at liberty, if it be in his Power: All these Cases afford the Parent, when he recovers his Understanding and his Freedom, just Occasion of disinheriting, and throwing by fuch Child; for every Body fees he was unnatural, and deferves no Fayour. It is but fit that he should be, in his turn, neglected and expos'd, who fuffer'd his Parent to be fo ferv'd, when he could, with his Ease, have hinder'd it. With his Eale,

Ease, we must add; for we must not hastily conclude, that all Children offend against their Duty, who do not pay their Parents Debts, and deliver them from Bonds and Imprisonment: For some. times the Children are just able to live themfelves, and have Families of their own to main. tain; and, if they should discharge their Parents Debts, must contract new ones of their own: And sometimes Parents are so extravagant, that there would be no end of paying for them. And therefore all things must be well considered, before we condemn the Children who fuffer their Parents to lie in Prison or Captivity: And we must fay, at present, that they who can, with Ease, or with no great Difease and Inconveniency, deliyer them from any Hardships, are so much oblig'd to do it, that the Neglect thereof is justly punishable with difinheriting, whenever the Parent recovers to an Ability of leaving them, or depriving them of, any Estate.

The other Causes, that are assign'd to justify the disinheriting Children, are such as concern not the Parent's Person, but his Fame and Reputation in some Respects: When their Faults are scandalous, and reslect Disgrace and Insamy upon the Parents and the Family; when they are extremely wicked and immoral, and give no hopes of Resormation and Amendment, but are, to all Appearance, irreclaimable. Vice and Virtue are of as much Importance; and therefore as much to be considered by Laws, as Right and Wrong, in the building and preserving Families and Tribes: And it tends exceedingly to the Advantage of

a State

a Sta

thou

ceed

Vice

The

Nat

thou

tue

wit

Ho

and

Bir

to

Me

mo

pe

by

W

W

Pa Po

in

D

it

b

/ Con-Duty,

eliver

ome.

hemnain-

rents

own:

that And

be-

their

1 we

Eafe,

deli-

lig'd

aish-

re-

ving

the

not tion

ıda-

the

iely

Re-

Ap-

to s

to in

es:

of

te

a State and Government, that Virtue in Children should have the Encouragement of hoping to fucceed to their Father's Estate, and that notorious Vice should receive the like Discouragement. There is no Body thinks, that the Compassions of Nature (which are oftentimes its Weakness) should carry it above the Considerations of Virtue and Goodness; i.e. that a Child should, without dispute, succeed to all the Advantages of Honour and Estate, let him be never so vicious and immoral, and every way unworthy of his Birth and Education, only because he happened to be born of fuch Parents. A Parent has not a Method more likely to fucceed, nor any Restraint more powerful over the infolent or vicious Tempers of Children, than the Power of putting them by their Estates, when they make themselves unworthy of them: And therefore 'tis the greater Wonder, and the greater Pity also, to see some Parents fo unadvifedly divest themselves of this Power before their time, by putting their Children in full Possession of what they have before their Death.

The Cafe indeed may fometimes happen, when it may be fit and reasonable, and profitable so to do; but it is but very feldom, and the Necessity ought to be pressing, and the Advantages very great and certain before 'tis done; because the Events of such a Practice have been often mischievous, and very pitiable. The Children thank them once for all; they thank them once for that, whose Hope would have kept them in a dutiful Dependance all their Lives long: This forward, and intended Kindnels of the

the Parents has made many Children ungracious and unnatural, that would have been, at least, to all Appearance, both dutiful and observant, if they had held them still in Hope and Expectation. There is a huge Difference to be made betwixt a fordid and unnatural Closeness, that will part with nothing to Children before Death, and fuch an open and profuse Folly, as will part with every Thing, and lay the Parent at the Mercy of the Child. In fuch a Cafe, the Parent lets go the hold he has upon his Children, and loses one of the most effectual means of keeping them dutiful and good, and virtuous and obedient: For when there is no more Expectation, there will be no more Dependance; and then it will be well, if they only grow neglectful, and not also insolent and unnatural.

But this a little by the by, when I was shewing how reasonable and justifiable it is in Parents to disinherit Children, whose Immoralities and Wickedness cry loud to Heaven, and reslect Shame and Dishonour on the Family, and exclude all hope of Resormation, or of being an useful Member of the Commonwealth: And therefore if a Daughter were, at any time, found to have transgress'd the Laws of Honour and Virtue, she was, without any farther Consideration, left to the Pity of her Parents, and could lay claim to no Provision, either by the Laws of God or Man.

You see that all these Causes are so reasonable and pressing, that, at the first hearing and considering them, they justifie the Parents disinheriting

their

the

pla

we

of

the

fel

pro

ral

Ca

Pa Oł

ou

no

no

Hi

his Pe

tif

ge

m

W

go

of

do

er

W

V

us

ft,

nt,

a-

eill

nd

th

of

go

ne

m

it:

re

ill

ot

N-

its

nd

ect

de

e-

nd

nd a-

ld

of

le

r-

ng

u

their Children: They leave no matter of Complaint or Murmuring behind them: When once we are convinc'd the Children are guilty of any of these Things, we acquit the Parents casting them off; and the Parents are acquitted by themfelves; their Conscience makes them no Reproaches of Cruelty, Injustice, or want of natural Affection, to their Children. In all these Cases, the Children's Offences dispence with the Parents Duty, and remove or fet aside their Obligation to make provision for them; and, without these Faults, a Parent will neither be easie nor innocent in casting off his Children: He must not therefore advise only with his own Passion or Humour, but with the Laws and Customs of his Country; he must have such Reasons as other People will approve, and fuch Cause as will juftify him to fuch as know the Cafe, though Strangers to him: Nay, though the Laws and Customs may leave a Man to act very Arbitrarily, yet it will not be long Satisfactorily, unless there appear good Reason at the bottom. A Parent will not be easie, after the fit of Anger is over, in casting off his Child; unless there be better Reason for so doing than appears to the World, or Reason enough appearing, to justifie him to others, in what he does.

A Man can never despise the Opinion of the World, or bear a hard Censure with Ease, unless he know something more of the Matter than the World knows, or think himself injur'd by such Censure; and therefore a Parent must know of more Offences and Provocations than other People

ple

ple know of, to be easie in rejecting his Child, or other People must know enough to justifie him. These Things are not well enough considered by all Parents, who exercise this supreme Authority over their Children, and difinherit them, and cast them off, for weak and trivial Causes. Sometimes, for no better Reason than some Unsightliness or ill Shape, as if the Parents Fancy (unnaturally nice) were to pass for Judgment, and the Children must be punish'd for what they cannot help, and for what the Parents are themselves to blame too often. Sometimes for a defect of Parts and Abilities, not fuch as would fuffice for the plain and honest purposes of Life; but such as are to render them accomplish'd and agreeable, which are often too near to Forwardness and Vanity, and Confidence, and might be better spar'd. Sometimes for some Personal Dislike, which is really at the bottom unaccountable, and therefore blameable; for Parents never must pretend Antipathy and natural Aversion to their Children; the Subject will not bear it, and whatever Parent feels it, he ought to suspect himself of something much amifs, and it will never pass for a good Excuse for neglecting Children. Sometimes they throw them off for fmall Miscarriages, and little venial Faults, that might be pardon'd to a tolerably good Servant, and should be overlook'd in Children. It is plain, from many positive Commands, and many Prohibitions, in Holy Scriptures, as well as from Experience and Examples; that Parents can be hard and unnatural to their Children, and do them great injury; or else it would wou to co riage heed quer ever the be co sare there Sur

wil wo Wi ow to ria

mif

or :

the Pro thi thi

> wi the ag fur

D rit ad

W

would be strange to tell them, that they ought to consider and make allowances for the Miscarriages of their Children, to remember they are heedless, wanton, and unmindful of the Consequences of their Action, and deserve Forgiveness, even when some fits of Obstinacy will not, for the present, let them ask it; and that it would be over-rigorous to take Advantage of them.

nild,

im.

d by

rity

cast

nes,

or ill

ice)

Iren

elp,

ame

and

lain

e to

nich

ity,

r'd.

eal-

fore

An-

en;

ent

ing

boc

hey

lit-

to-

k'd

m-

rip-

es;

neir

e it

uld

Sometimes it also happens, that the Children are disposses'd, first of the Father's Love, and then of all their Hopes of Succession, by wrong Surmife or false Suggestion; they are unhappily mistaken of ill Designs by the Parents themselves, or fecretly accus'd by others of fomething that will make them odious to their Parents, and unworthy of their Favour. Sometimes the second Wife is to make way to the Inheritance for her own Children, by false and soft Infinuations, to the prejudice of the Children of the first Marriage and fometimes by downright Accufation of them; and fometimes this ill Province falls to the share of other Kinsmen and Relations, whose Prospect of succeeding is not very distant. thing can well be more malicious and wicked than this, and the least that a Parent can do will be to confider, who, and whose Friends they are, that come to to provoke and fet him against his own Children; he ought in Reason to suspect such as shall certainly be Gainers, if his Displeasure take effect, and proceed to disinheriting: He is oblig'd to be very cautious how he admits of Accufations, and to weigh all things well, before he believe; for the Peace of his Mind

Mind will very much depend upon the Care and Diligence he uses to get good Information. And here it is, that it feems proper to meet with an Observation, which, they say, [Bishop Sanderson's Serm. 14. ad Aul. p. 199.] is grounded upon manifold Experience, that where the right Heirs have been difinherited, upon almost what soever Pretence, the Blessing of God bath not usually followed upon the Persons, and seldom hath the Estate prospered in the Hands of those that have succeeded in their rooms. It is with this Observation, I believe, as with most others, (where the Judgments of God are call'd in to execute Vengeance) that one or two Examples either make a Rule, or confirm it, if made before; and a hundred others go for nothing, or are overlook'd, that do not fall in with fuch a Maxim, especially when it is on the fide of Justice and Religion, to all appearance.

A Parent may most certainly disinherit his Son, for good Causes, such as I have been already mentioning, with the Confent of Reason and Sense, the Laws and Customs of wise Nations, and the Examples of the best Men, and with the Approbation of God's Law, and his own Confcience, as certainly as he may do any thing else: And when this guilty Person is remov'd, why the next Heir may not succeed without any Terror on his Mind, or Apprehension of God's Anger and Judgments to follow, one can never fee a What Place can the Anger of God, or his Judgments have, where neither the Parent nor the Successor have sinn'd? If, indeed, the Parent do wilfully, furiously, and without just caule,

fee : Pare or i ed his Hei Wo eitl ple Wit the or Ble Th Su M ety na go A (a

of

m

di

n

fu

caul

and

And

Ob-

rm.

Ex-

fin-

ing

ons.

nds

is

oft

l'd

m-

de

or

1 2

ice

m

dy

nd

ıs,

he

n-

2:

ne

or

er

a

r

it

-

cause, disinherit the eldest Son, God may, if he fee fit, (and that is all) punish the Injustice of the Parent, in bringing to mifery the appointed Heir; or if the appointed Heir has, by unjust and wicked means, by Lies and falle Suggestions, abus'd his Parent, and excited him to difinherit the true Heir, he may be Debtor to God's Justice in this World, and be punish'd for such wicked Fraud, either in his Person or Estate, or both, as God pleases: But when a Man comes innocently, and without his fault or feeking, to inherit an Estate, there can be no reason to fear God's Anger, or apprehend his Judgments, or the want of his Bleffing, if he do not otherwise provoke him. The truth of it is, Mankind is very prone to Superstition; and entertains very greedily such Maxims and Observations as have a face of Piety and Justice, and close with the Fondness of natural Affections, though in truth there be no good reason at the bottom, if well examin'd: And then, when a Man falls into any Misfortunes, (as there are few who do not, and have not their Lives more than chequered with them) the Eyes of People are upon him; and if he be before mark'd out by any of these Rules, and in a Condition capable of having them applied to him, his Misfortunes shall undoubtedly be ascrib'd to his Condition, and be call'd the Effects of God's Judgments due to him upon such Accounts, and for fuch Reasons. A very false, and hazardous, uncharitable way of judging.

This is what I thought convenient to fay upon the matter of Peoples difinheriting and rejecting

their

their Children, who are yet oblig'd, by the Christian Religion, to make all due and fitting Provision for them: These are the Reasons that justify the Parents in casting them off, and dispence with all their Obligations; and whatever Parent will act arbitrarily, and without them, will never be able to be at quiet in his own Mind, or perform the Duty he owes to his Children; he must needs be self-condemn'd, and, with St. Paul, worse than

an Infidel.

I will make an end of this Subject, when I have made this one Observation more; that the Parents, who confume their whole Estate, with which they should provide for their Children, in Gaming, Drinking, Riot, Luxury, and finful Pleasures, are in no better Condition, nor do any better discharge their Duty to their Children, than they, who, for little or no Cause, Anger, Folly, or Humour, difinherit their Children, and cut them off from their Estates. There is, indeed, great Difference betwixt the Minds and Affections of these two Sorts of Parents, but the Effect to the Children is the fame: And fince the Commands of God to Parents, to make Provision for the Children, are given for the Children's fakes; if these Commands take not effect, it is all one to them what it is that hinders it: They are full as destitute and helpless by their Parents Neglect, as they could be by their Displeasure; and they become as miserable when the Parents Luxury and Vice deprive them of their Maintenance, as when they are difinherited through causless Anger, and by false Suggestions. And a Parent, who is thus abus'd abus'd more toufly. might Suften willin his Du der a himfe other fooliff by M not fa bring. tion t finitel ginab. this, 1 gence might it is n natur dren Pardo the N ed yo takes It bis lated mano

Rew

lects be ac abus'd into the wronging of his Children, is much more innocent and pitiable, than he who riotoufly, vainly, and viciously spends the Estate that might and should contribute to his Children's Sustenance and Welfare; because this Man does willingly deprive himself of the Means of doing his Duty: And the other, who is abus'd, is under a Force and Constraint, acting reasonably to himself, though mistaken through the Faults of other People. And therefore, these luxurious foolish Spenders, when they come to die, or are by Mifery reduc'd before-hand to confider, cannot fatisfy themselves with knowing, and remembring, that they never had any Thought or Intention to wrong their Children, but lov'd them infinitely, and wish'd them all the Happiness imaginable: They cannot fatisfy themselves with this, whilft, through their Folly, and their Negligence, they fee those Children miserable, that might and should have been provided for: And it is not enough for them to grieve, as they will naturally do, at the Misfortunes of their Children; but they ought to repent, and ask God's Pardon, for they have trespass'd against him, by the Neglect of their Duty; for that, I have shewed you, is the Way which the Christian Religion takes to make all People in the World happy: It binds the natural and civil Duties upon all related, and concern'd, with strong and strict Commands of God, under severe Penalties, and huge Rewards; so that whatever Christian now neglects the Performance of them, he shall not only be accounted heedlefs, ill advis'd, and unnatu-

on he

all act ole

he be an

I he th

in ill do

n, er,

d, ns

to n-

or s; to

as

y

r,

d

ral; but highly finful and provoking, and shall, without Repentance, be severely punish'd. He is esteem'd to deny the Faith, and to be worse than an Insidel: And therefore it will be more tolerable for them in the Day of Judgment, than for him.

DIS.

D

Ye I

W

live in tri in S man fion, fillin

Cor Peo owr the

it, i

Husis the

wh

 W_0

Ver wh shall,

re to-

He worfe

DISCOURSE VII.

I PETER III. VERSES 1, 2.

Ye Wives, be in Subjection to your own Husbands; that if any obey not the Word, they also may, without the Word, be won by the Conversation of the Wives: While they behold their chast Conversation coupled with Fear.

THE Scripture does, in a great many Places, lay most express Commands on Wives, to live in Subjection to their Husbands; but I choose, in treating of this Duty, to speak to this Passage in St. Peter, because it contains not only the Command; but one of the good Effects of fuch Submiffion, which is a great Encouragement to the fulfilling it; for when a Law carries its Reason with it, it is more likely to find a good Acceptance and Compliance, especially with quick and disputing People, than when it comes arm'd only with its own Authority and Power. The Command in the Text is to Wives, to be in Subjection to their Husbands. The Encouragement to Obedience is the great Likelihood of good Effects to follow, the winning over the unbelieving Husband; that if any obey not the Word, they may, without the Word, be won by the Conversation of the Wife: Which Conversation is to be chast, and with Fear; while they behold their chast Conversation coupled Which last Words, (as also the three Verses following) are either an Explanation of what it is, to be in Subjection to Husbands; or a Descrip-

Description of such Qualifications as will make a very good Wife to her Husband, and acceptable to God; and will therefore come, in time, to be considered at large. In the mean time, let us see a little, in the first place, to the Command; Wives,

be in Subjection to your own Husbands.

It is impossible for any Company of People to fubfift any while together, without a Subordination of one to the other. Where all will command, none will obey; and then there will be nothing done but Mischief. We see, when People meet, who have no Pretentions one upon another, they are fain to agree among themselves to allow a Preference, and fome kind of Superiority to some of the Company, that Business may be done; they govern themselves either by known establish'd Rules and Customs of Honour and Ceremony, or elfe they confider Age, Capacity, or Experience: Something or other there is, that determines their Choice, because they find it absolutely necessary to silence the Pretences of every Man, by preferring some or other, that they may obtain the End of their affembling. Even among Friends and Equals, where the least Pretence to Pre-eminence would dissolve the Friendship, and break up all the Intercourse, yet is there a Necessity that one should yield it to the other; and fo they do, to make the Conversation useful: And the longer People are to live together, the greater is the Necessity of Subordination and Subjection one to another; because there will unavoidably rife still more and more Occasions of Division and Difference, which will require the greater

grea as U tend yield ces, or li

> that whi The gina Cit

> > per

Art Sup the iy p for has and La

> to rei wh Al

M tha W Bu

fer th greater Unity: Now there can be no such thing as Unity, where two Parties contend for, or pretend to Superiority, or such Equality as will not yield. All this is evident in Kingdoms, Provinces, Cities, and private Corporations, either great or little. And this should help to convince the Wives, who are now going to make up a Family, that there is an absolute Necessity of Government, which supposes Subjection some where or other: They must needs see, that every Family (the Original, indeed, and Model of Bodies Corporate, Cities, and Commonwealths) must have its proper Superiour, whom all the rest must needs

obey.

e a

ble

be

fee

ses,

to

12-

m-

be

-05

10-

to

10-

ay

by

ur

01-

it

of

ey

en

e-

d-

re

1;

1:

ne

b-

a-

of

1e

r

And when they are convinc'd of this great Article, the next Enquiry is to be, whether this Superiority, that is fo unavoidably necessary to the Support of Rule and Order, is well and rightly plac'd in Husbands, rather than in Wives: And for this, they are to consider; 1st. Where Nature has defign'd this Sovereignty: 2dly. Where Use and Custom have plac'd it: And, lastly, what the Laws of God fay to the Matter. 1st. They are to confider where Nature has defign'd this Sovereignty: And that we may well prefume to be, where she has given the greatest Strength and Abilities; where she has made the Body and the Mind fittest to undergo the Toils and Labours that are absolutely necessary to the Being and Well-being of the World; to the carrying on Business at home, and Trade abroad; to the detending one's Country from foreign Foes, and to the administring Justice to one another: Now K 3

where we perceive Nature has best qualified her Creatures for Performance of these Functions, that are so necessary, that the World cannot subsist in Peace and Order without them, we may very fafely conclude the defign'd to place the Superio-Now, whether Women have naturally Strength and Abilities of Body and Mind to go through these Things, if Men should for a while neglect them, need not be question'd: It is demonstrably certain that they have not; and if they have not, who should do them but Men, whom Nature hath fitted for it? And in as much as Nature hath made Men necessary for these Works, she hath made them superiour to such as are not able to do them; for where People are in other Respects equal, Strength of Body and Capacity of Mind will undoubtedly make them superiour. We find it is so in all the Creatures of the World besides. And though there are a great many Instances of the contrary, yet they will never avail to the overthrowing the visible Defign of Nature: Though there be many Women superiour to many Men in Strength of Body, and Abilities of Mind, in Fineness of Parts, Greatness of Capacity, Soundness of Judgment, and Strength and Faithfulness of Memory; yet the Number of fuch neither is, nor ever was, nor ever will be, great enough to shew, that Nature intended to give that Sex the Superiority over the Men: And though Use and Education might make some alteration in the Case, yet all the Use and Education in the World would never fit them for the Performances of the great Businesses, aboveabove and r at hor evide the M

A ture, Cou the 1 deed that it m gard to h with tle a trary Nat pani that hav Sol Ma WO the Tin vic

Go wh

juf

above-mention'd, of Trade and Merchandize, and making Wars abroad, and executing Justice at home: The Abilities of managing which, are evident Indications of Nature's intending to make

the Men superiour to the Women.

her

ions,

ibfift

very

erio-

rally

o go

hile

de-

d if

1en,

uch

hefe

h as

are

and

iem

ires

e a

ney

ble

Vo-

dy,

at-

nd

the

ver

in-

he

ht

lie

m

S,

e-

And, agreeable to this manifest Design of Nature, have been the Usages and Customs of all Countries in the World, at all times; which was the second thing to be enquir'd after. Thefe indeed have been fo much to the Difadvantage of that Sex, that, without all doubt, they have done it manifest Injury, and have not had so great Regard to it, as in all Reason and Sense they ought to have had: So far from disputing the Priority with them, that they have plac'd them but a little above their Slaves, or menial Servants, contrary to Reason and Decency, and the Design of Nature, who intended them for Friends and Companions in all their Fortunes. Even the Nations, that have been accounted wifeft and most civiliz'd, have yet allowed them to be only made for the Solace of Mankind, the Care of some domestick Matters, and the Continuance of the World, and would let them bear no other part in it; so that the Searches after the Usages and Customs of all Times, will be but short, and do them little Service.

They have only, in the third and last place, to enquire, what help Religion and the Laws of God afford, the Sanctuary of all the Weak, and which provide Security against Oppression and Injustice. When St. Paul is giving Rules to the Women, 1 Tim. 2. he says, amongst other Things,

K 4

V. 11, 12.

and

nor Ob

the

Va

W

in

an

th

ea

v. 11, 12. Let the Woman learn in filence, with all Subjection: But I suffer not a Woman to teach, (i.e. in publick) nor to usurp Authority over the Man, but to be in filence: And then subjoins these Reasons, For Adam was first formed, then Eve: And Adam was not deceived, (i.e. first) but the Woman being deceiv'd, was (first, i.e.) in the Transgression. From whence it appears, that he makes the Creation or Formation of Eve after Adam, to be one Reason of her Subjection: And this Reason would have held good, if both had continued innocent, for it was a Reafon before they transgress'd; and therefore St. Paul urges the Subjection of all Women to their Husbands, upon that account, because the first of Men was before the first of Women. But the second Reafon of the Women's Subjection, is fetch'd from Eve's being first in the Transgression: She was deceiv'd first, and then deceiv'd her Husband; she was undone by disobeying God, and he undone by following her; she must therefore rule no more: It was part of her Curse and Punishment, that her Desire should be to her Husband, or subject to her Husband, and he should rule over her. Well, but how could this Subjection of the Woman to her Hu band be a part of the Curse and Punishment for her Transgression, when it is plain The was to be in Subjection, even in Paradife, and State of Innocence, by vertue of Adam's being first form'd, and then Eve? which is St. Paul's Argument, To reconcile these things, we must know, that Subjection in Paradife would have been no Task or Burthen; it would have been more ealy and

foolish

and delightful to obey in that State, than it can be ithall now to command: It would not indeed have been teach. Obedience, but the doing all they lik'd and lov'd er the themselves: Man would have then had no Folly, thefe Vanity, Pride, Self-conceit or Ill-nature, from Eve: whence proceed all idle, harsh, ungrateful, and ut the imperious Orders: But all his Thoughts, Words n the and Defigns, would have been wife and reasonaat he ble, just and kind, regular and orderly, so that after the Execution of them would have been most And eafy and delightful; they would have carried their had Conviction along with them; they would have efore all appear'd fo useful, so becoming, and so necesurges fary to their Good, that Women would have haftinds, ned, with great Pleafure, to perform them: They Was would themselves, also, have wanted that extraor-Readinary good Opinion of their Worth and Abilities, rom s dewhich makes them frequently perverse and disputatious, when any thing is enjoin'd them; and confhe fequently, would not have found that Rifing and lone Refistency within, which now they do: In a no word, all things elfe, as well as themselves, would ent, have been much otherwise than now they are; Suband therefore Subjection would have been no Burher. Vothen to the Women, nor the Command have given any great Authority to the Men. To make Suband jection therefore part of the Curfe, and Punishlain ment affixed to Eve, and her Posterity of the same and first Sex; it must needs be, that Subjection should be in things difficult and unacceptable, against gutheir Will and Defire, a Subjection to many vain w, and idle, to many froward and unkind, to many no afy injurious and austere Commands, which the nd

foolish, severe, imperious Humours of the Husbands lay upon them. To have their Desire to their Husbands, signifies, here, to be subject to their Wills. You shall not be Mistress of your self, nor have any Desire satisfied, but what is approved of by your Husband; you shall be wholly under his Power and Tutelage, he shall command you many Things that you dislike, and yet you shall obey: As unreasonable and extravagant as his Desire shall often appear to you, yet it shall govern you; and you shall have no other to take place, but when he finds it sit to yield it to you.

It is impossible to make less of a Punishment and Curfe, than this; and fince St. Paul founds this unacceptable Subjection of the Wives to their Husbands, upon this place in Genefis, wherein God lays it on them as a Punishment for Eve's being first in the Transgression, it is impossible any way to avoid it; and as manifest it is, that so it has been commanded by God, from the Beginning of the World. This Subjection is not therefore founded only on the Power and Strength and superiour Abilities, with which it pleas'd God to endue Men, above the Women; nor on the Usages and Customs of the World, (which Power and Strength will always have upon their fide) but most especially on God's Commands, laying it as a Punishment on the Sex, for the forward Transgression of their first Mother; and that it might not be evaded, as a Curse and Punishment, which all People may avoid as much as they can, the fame Thing is commanded over and over again in the New Testament, as in Co-

os.

loff.

Hu

22.

ban

He

of

tha

otl

to

un

ed

te

to

kı

Si

n

va h

tl

us-

eir lls.

by

his

ouall

nis

oke

nt.

ds

to

e-

S

le

6

2-

ot

h

d

n

h

r

d

loss. 3. 18. Wives, submit your selves unto your own Husbands, as it is fit, in the Lord. So in Eph. 5. 22. Wives, submit your selves unto your own Husbands, as unto the Lord; for the Husband is the Head of the Wife, even as Christ is the Head of the Church; and concludes, let the Wife fee that the reverence her Husband: And so in many other places, as well as in the Text. But because to be in Subjection, is a Phrase of indefinite and uncertain Sense, fince all Inferiours are commanded to be subject to the higher Powers, and Children to their Parents, and Servants to their Mafters, and Men to one another, as well as Wives to their Husbands; it will be needful for them to know, in what particulars, the Wives must be in Subjection to their Husbands; for a Subject cannot obey his King, nor a Son his Father, nor a Servant his Master, in all Things; but each Superiour has his proper and peculiar Sway, and each Inferiour has a limited Subjection: There is fomething that fets out the Bounds of every one's Power, and every one's Obedience, and the Transgreffors of them become on one fide Tyrants and Usurpers, and on the other disobedient Rebels: And so it is with Wives and Husbands; the one may exercise a Power that belongs not to them; and the other refuse Submission where 'tis due, and should be paid. It is therefore certain, that a Wife owes no Subjection to her Husband, against the Laws of either God, or Man: Religion and good Morals claim the first place in her Obedience; and though, I think, the Laws, or rather Customs, of the Land are very tender to Women

Women offending in the Company of their Hufbands, as prefuming them under Command and some kind of Constraint from them, yet Religion has no fuch Confideration, but includes them all under Sin, who commit any finful Actions; and no Command or Example of a Husband will excuse a Wife offending against a known Law of God, or doing any thing immoral. owes him no Subjection in fuch Matters; he is himself a Rebel to their common Lord and Master, whilst commanding any such unlawful Action. But in other Matters common and indifferent, their Disobedience will be faulty, where Reason, and Discretion, allowed of Custom, Decency, and good Fame, will not make their Excuse. Where Men's Commands are evidently unreasonable, shamefully indiscreet, unusual and unheard of, infamous, or unbecoming their Age, their Credit, Quality and Condition, they may be fafely pass'd by; omitted, rather than neglected or despis'd: And because it will be asked, who shall be Judges in such Case; the Wives must take good care, that the Commands, which they comply not with, may be fuch as will justify them to any wife impartial People; fo that, who will be Judges, they may reasonably excuse their Non-compliance, and condemn the Men that gave such Orders: It will not be enough for Wives to oppose their Wills to the Wills of their Husbands, nor Reasons to Reasons, unless apparently unequal; because, in both these Cases, they do evidently contend for Mastery; for if the Will and Reason of one be equal to the other's, it is something

thing and t faid,

T confi trou quir in W ever at a fom thei tion ceri wei Ob dre ter and tho and bar W a l L

th al

to

he

thing besides that must determine who shall yield; and then we must recur to what hath been before

faid, to know who is Superjour.

Juf-

and

cion

em

ns;

and

Wn

She

e is

ind

ful

in-

ty,

ul-

ke

vi-

in-

ng

n,

an

d,

ist

ey

m

ill

ir

e

0

S,

i-

The Truth of it is, the People, who ought to confider these Things best, are they who never trouble their Heads about them; so far from enquiring where, and when they must obey, and in what Cases they are at Liberty, that they are evermore at Liberty, and never are in Subjection at all, though in the most reasonable and handfome Cases that are; but forget their Duty and their Sex together. They confider not Subjection and Submission, in these Instances, as concern'd in Religion or Conscience at all; as if they were not commanded by God as certainly, as Obedience of Subjects to their Princes, of Children to their Parents, and Servants to their Mafters: Subjection, in all these, looks like religious, and relating to the Conscience, and obliging those concern'd by vertue of God's Command; and why the being in Subjection to their Hufbands fhould not concern the Consciences of Wives as much, they will never be able to give a Reason: I have already shewed them, that the Laws of God do positively charge it on them.

But because Subjection, in this Place and Argument, does not only signifie bare Submission to the Will and Pleasure of Husbands, but includes also other Qualifications, such as may make them acceptable both to God, and Men; they also are to come into Consideration, when we are treating of the Duty of Wives: And the first that is here mention'd, is a chast Conversation coupled

with

with Fear. By Conversation, is understood the whole course and way of Living, all the exteriour Management and Behaviour; and therefore a chast Conversation requires not only the Purity and Cleanness of the Heart, but such an outward, innocent and decent Carriage, as may denote that inward Purity: It is what the Husband may fee, because he is to be won by it, and gain'd over, and it is faid to be coupled with Fear; because the Fear of God is the surest Preservative of Chastity in the Heart; and the Fear of Man, of Laws, of Infamy and Shame, and ill Report, the great Security of a chaft and honourable Conversation without. There is no need of faying much in Commendation of this great Virtue to Wives; they cannot choose but know, that, without it, they are Wives no longer; the Band of Wedlock is immediately dissolv'd before God; and before Man, as foon as the Husband pleafes to ask the Affistance of the Law: But this is not without the Breach of the most solemn and tremendous Vow and Promife that can be thought on; the Guilt of fuch a Perjury, as cannot ever be aton'd for in this World, and of fuch horrible Injustice, as can never be repair'd, either to Husband, or to Children. In other Cases, a Perjury may take away a Man's good Name, or his Estate; but there may be some amends made him for both of them, by Repentance: His good Name may be recovered by a Recantation and Denial of what was fworn to his Prejudice; and his Estate may come again, by force of Law, or voluntary Surrender. If the Life of

a F for unl tice as

ty,

for ho pu ab

ca co is

fir M no P

01

a

1

t

Fa-

the

terifore

rity

out-

de-

and in'd

be-

tive

an,

ort,

on-

ing

to th-

of od;

ea-

his

nn be

n-

of d,

er

ne

n-

e--

e-

of

1-

a Father be taken away by Perjury and Injustice, fome Compensation may be after made to his unhappy Children. But the Perjury and Injuftice of an Adulterous Wife, are such Offences, as can receive no Reparation or Amendment; even a Confession of their Crime to the injur'd Party, may make him yet more miserable, and do him farther Injury; and, as for Satisfaction, 'tis not in their Power. How strangely hard is it, for such to make a good and true Repentance; how long and bitter should their Sorrow and Compunction be before God, fince they have fo difabled themselves, from doing any thing besides? Sure, by their flexible and tender Constitution, and these Considerations, no People in the World can fin, with fuch a fensible and painful Selfconviction, as false Wives: And therefore, there is the less need of enlarging any farther on this first Instance of Subjection to Husbands: The Matter is fo plain and reasonable, so just and honest, that they, who will not be subject in this Point, will not (need not, I think) regard the being fo in any other.

But it is not refraining from adulterous Practice only, that is enough to denominate a Conversasation chast: The outward Carriage must be also honest and inosfensive, void of Suspicion as well as Blame: And this it will be, if it be coupled with Fear, i.e. a tender Regard of Reputation and good Fame, as well as Fear of offending the Husband: They must provide Things honest not only in the sight of the Lord, but in the sight of Men. The Scriptures do not only call on People to se-

cure

cure their Hearts to God, but are exceeding careful to urge them to fet forth a good Example to all the World of Standers by: They are by their good Works to glorifie their Father, who is in Heaven; they must not only be acceptable to God, but approved of Men. I will praise the Lord with my whole Heart, secretly among the Faithful, and in the midst of the Congregation, faith the Psalmist. So St. Paul exhorts the Theffalonians and Philipians to feveral Christian Duties, and good Works, that the Name of the Lord Jesus might be glorified in them. And so St. Peter would have the Christians have their Conversation honest among the Gentiles, that they might, by their good Works, which they should behold, glorifie God in the Day of Visitation. So in other places, We are to adorn the Doctrine of God our Saviour in all things; to have our Conversation worthy of the Gospel; and to walk worthy of the Vocation wherewith we are called, and as becometh Saints; to give no offence in any thing, that the Ministry, i.e. the Gospel Dispenfation, be not blamed. Let as many Servants as are under the yoke, count their own Masters worthy of all Honour; that the Name of God, and his Doctrine be not blasphemed: And more nearly to the purpose of the Text, Tit. 2. 5. Let Women be discreet, chast, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own Husbands, that the word of God be not blasphem'd. And again, I will that younger Women marry, and keep the House, to give no occasion to the Adversary, i. e. to any Enemies of the Christian Religion, to speak reproachfully; that is, to reproach the Holy Religion; as tho, after

all its bette no be than whice anity tian also great

fooli appo are ficar it had

loqu

of the

Mo

to the ligit obey be to be to

lt i give ma Ch

goo liev e-

to

eir

a-

ut

27

in

A.

i-

s,

e

e

all its good Lessons, in all respects, Men liv'd no better than they did before, the Servants were no better Servants, nor the Women better Wives, than they were before they were converted, which were much to the Difgrace of Christianity. So that it is not, truly, enough for a Chriftian to be indeed virtuous and good, if he may also appear so; because a good Example is of great use, not only to silence the Reproaches, Obloquies and Blasphemies, or evil Speakings, of foolish, ignorant or malicious People, who, for appearing visible Miscarriages in Management, are ready to charge Religion as a useless infignificant thing, but for the good Effect and Influence it has upon all that take notice of it; for as a bad Example turns to the Discredit and Reproach of the Profession, so does a good one to its Honour. and Advantage, and gains infenfibly upon the most obdurate Minds.

And that is (in the fecond Place) one of the Motives and Encouragements St. Peter propounds to the Wives, to live in a holy, careful, and religious Subjection to their Husbands; that if any obey not the Word, they also may, without the Word, be won by the Conversation of the Wives, whilst they behold their chast Conversation coupled with Fear. It is much the same Advice with what St. Paul gives, 1 Cor. 7. that if an Unbeliever, either Woman or Man, were married to a Believer, the Christian should not think of parting upon that icore; but stay the rather, to win, by a kind, good-natur'd Christian Conversation, the unbelieving Party over to the Faith; How knowest thou,

thou, O Wife, whether thou shalt save thy Husband; or thou O Man, whether thou shalt save thy Wife? 16 v. They both of them suppose, that a virtuous, fober, and religious Example, may be likely to prevail, when the Word of God it felf, from the Mouth of a Preacher, is of no force or value: And great indeed is the power of a good Example, well manag'd, especially where it is always present, as, in the Case before us, is suppos'd; it is an Argument that is always operating some way or other, a Man cannot help attending to it: He fees, for instance, his Wife, by vertue of the Christian Doctrine, leading a fober, chaft, religious Life, fetting the Fear of God continually before her Eyes, and practifing the Commands of Christ, not only abstaining from Adultery, and open Falshood and Abomination, which the Laws, and Vengeance of her injur'd Partner might severely punish; but also from all Appearance of Evil, out of the Reach of all Suspicion, guided in all her Words and Actions by the Rules of a strict and severe Virtue; fo careful of fulfilling his Desires, and satisfying to her Duty in all particulars, and living in fuch a handsome free Subjection to his Will, that 'tis impossible he should not have some likeing to the Religion and good Principles that influence her to fuch Obedience and fuch Virtue: He fees the power of Christianity in such desireable Effects, that he will certainly conclude, it is a useful and most holy Dispensation, a Religion honourable for God, and serviceable to Mankind.

And

A

a M

a Re

Prin

ing '

petu

no P

Met

dent

famo

pute

coup

nefs

Sub

vert

Chr

the

to t

Chr

and

Hu

cou

pre

beli

in 1

gre.

and

cha

and

tim

the

A

And there is nothing sooner likely to convert a Man to a Religion, than seeing it very fit to be a Religion, by its Principles, and finding those Principles operative and effectual to the produceing what it aims at. Such an Example will perpetually reproach and disturb him, and give him no Peace, till he comply with it; it is a powerful Method in the Hands and Management of a prudent Woman, and will prevail sooner than all the same Reasons of Religion together, rang'd into Order, with the Noise of Opposition and Districts

pute.

Hus-

Save

oose,

ple,

d of

her,

d is

g'd,

, in

ient

r, a

in-

)oc-

fet-

yes,

only

and

nce

ish;

the

ords

rere

l fa-

ing

Iill,

ke-

in-

ue:

ire-

it is

ion

an-

nd

And if a fober, chaft, religious Conversation, coupled with Fear, i. e. with a becoming Carefulness of not offending, and a familiar, easie, free Submission, be the most likely Method of converting an unbelieving Husband to the Faith of Christ; there is a great deal of Probability, that the same wife and good Courses will also obtain, to the winning over Husbands, who are already Christians, from many idle or finful Practices, and curing them of many foolish and perverse Humours; which may also be a Motive and Encouragement to fuch a Subjection as the Apostle prescribes, although the Women have not unbelieving Husbands, i.e. fuch as are not Christians in Profession. Unless a Man be brutaliz'd to a great degree, and in a manner forfaken of God, and left entirely to himself, the meek and quiet, chaft and fober Conversation of his Wife will win and gain upon him. Few Men but have their times of thinking and confidering; and when they shall remember and reflect upon the Car-

L 2

riage

riage and Conversation of their Wives, and find, that, instead of falsifying their Vows of Faith and Chaftity, they have most carefully and religioufly observed them; not made them such Requitals as their Perjury and Falshood, according to the Maxims of the World, requir'd and called for, and would justifie; but have been wary to a scruple, manag'd themselves so nicely, virtuoufly and well, that they have given them neither fecret Jealoufy within, nor Shame and Infamy abroad, and born their fenfible and wounding Injuries, to the eye of the World, as though they had been treated honeftly and kindly: A Man must be of a horribly hard, inflexible Illnature, whom such Reflection will not foften into Love and Pity; the Remembrance of fuch Kindness, and good Qualities, and fuch a Converlation, is as likely to effect a Cure, and to reduce a wandring Husband, as any thing besides: He will fee and admire the power of Virtue and Religion, and the huge Difference betwixt the Choice his virtuous and deliberate Love made, and that which his impetuous finful Passion fince has thrown him on: How frugal, ferviceable, and creditable the one has been, and how extravagant, expensive, mischievous and shameful the other: How deep a Debtor the Allurements of one have made him to God's Justice, and to what Despair and Misery they have reduced him, whill the Prayers, and Tears, and Intercession of the other may have preserv'd him for Repentance and Forgiveness. This may not only fill him with good Idea's of Religion, but prove a Motive to

his Chim reason his V futur religion,

tion, confl It othe less the but a thele no: all t evil, muf one's and upoi the and fatio pro the who not, hav the

his

the

bot

the

his Conversion; it may turn his Heart, and bring him to the ways of Goodness; he may see how reasonable it is, that he should be as faithful to his Vows, and true to his Engagements, for the future, as the has been; and, in a generous and religious Gratitude, may set about a Reformation, and redeem his past Miscarriages by After-

constancy and Kindness.

It is not indeed certain, that thefe, or any other Methods, will reclaim a vicious and a faithless Husband; but it is certain, that these are the most likely to do it, and best fitted for it; but at least that every Woman is oblig'd to take these Courses, whether they prove effectual or no: It is that which they both first, and last, and all the while, must practife, and with which no evil, false, injurious Usage can dispence: There must be no Requital in these sinful Instances, one's Sin will never make excuse for another's; and 'twere a fad Revenge that would fall, at last, upon their own Souls. They must still persist in the Performance of their Duties towards God and Man; if their chast and religious Converlation prevail, they have gain'd their Point, and prov'd the Instruments of the greatest good in the World, to those they love the best, and to whom they owe it most: And if they prevail not, they have the Satisfaction of knowing they have done their Duty all the while; and taken the Courses that were likeliest to effect what they defired and wanted; they are excufable both to God and Man, and shall not fail of their Reward. Whereas, by a light and idle, wan-

ton

eto his

find.

h and

reli-

h Re-

rding

d cal-

Wary

Vir-

them

d In-

ound-

Ough

:: A

e III-

n in-

fuch

Con-

o re-

ides:

and

t the

rade,

fince

ble,

etra-

the

's of

what

hille

the

ince

vith

ton and fuspicious Carriage, they do not only give offence to fober, virtuous People, and great Encouragement to vicious impudent At. tempters; but do Religion great Mischief, weak. en it much in the Minds of their ill-dispos'd Part. ners, who fee it has not any of its boafted Power and Efficacy, and strangely alienates their Affections from them, and hardens them in their unlawful Practices: For the most desperately vicious and ungodly Husbands in the World would have their Wives even scrupulously virtuous, and religious, and make the want of those good Qualities and Graces, Pretences for their holding out themselves against them; and therefore Wives are inexcusable that will not try so to reclaim them, especially when 'tis their Duty so to do, let the Event be what it will. This is the first, and greatest Instance of that Subjection which every Wife must live in to her Husband; and we fee that it is not without its Encouragement, eyen it this Life, namely, the Likelihood of reclaiming him to Faithfulness and Constancy, which bring their Reward with them.

DIS

D

Who

171

01

de

41

oug

first

Hu

wh

De

and

Bo

to 2d

at jud ma Sc

> re H

> > be

DISCOURSE VIII.

I PETER III. VERSES 3, 4.

Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the Hair, and of wearing of Gold, or of putting on of Apparel: But let it be the hidden Man of the Heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the Ornament of a meek and quiet Spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

CT. Peter, defigning to make all Women as ood Wives, and good Christians, as they ought to be, lays down this general Rule, in the first place, that they must be in Subjection to their own Husbands: The Reasonableness and Necessity of which, I have tried to flew, 1st. From the visible Defign of Nature, which hath denied to them, and given to Men, the Strength and Abilities of Body and Mind, which are absolutely requisite to carry on the necessary Business of the World. adly. From the Usages and Customs of the World, at all times, which have rather been to their Prejudice than Advantage. And, 3dly, From the many Commands of God to the contrary, in Holy Scriptures. And then he descends to particular Injunctions, in order to the same good End, of rendring them acceptable to God, and to their Husbands: One, and a very great one, was to have their Conversation chast, and coupled with Fear; i. e. not only pure and clean Hearts, but a discreet Reservedness, and modest Carriage outwardly; a careful nice Regard to Fame and good Report;

laim do, first, hich and ent,

re-

icy,

only

and t At-

weak. Part-

Pow.

r Af-

their

ly vi-

rould

, and

Qua-

lives

S-

Report; fuch a fober, virtuous and prudent Management, as will denote the Fear of God with. in, and that the Mind is govern'd by good Principles, and influenc'd by the Laws of Christianity; so that they, who behold this chast and good Conversation, shall glorify God; and the Husband, if there be need, shall be won and gain'd upon by it, to the Conversion of his Soul, the Reformation of his Manners, and Increase of Vir-He is now proceeding to lay down other Rules and Instructions; such as will very much forward his Defign of making the Women good Wives, and good Christians. First, Negatively, by shewing them, that the Ways of the World were not fuch as he would advise, or thought fit either to commend them to God, or their Hufbands: Whose adorning, let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the Hair, and of wearing of Gold, or of putting on of Apparel. But, Secondly, Affirmatively, he shews them what it is he would advise, and why: But let it be the hidden Man of the Heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the Ornament of a meek and quiet Spirit, which is in the fight of God of great trice. I am, first, to speak to his Advice, which is negative, relating to the outward adorning of the Body: And it is very near the same with what St. Paul delivers, I Tim. 2. Verses 9, 10. Inlike manner also, that Women adorn themselves in modest Apparel, with Shamefacedness and Sobriety; not with broidered Hair, or Gold, or Pearls, or coftly Array; but (which becometh Women trofessing Godlines) with good Works. St. Chryfostom understands these Words, as if St. Paul were directing

direc wher any F there Do 1 in G come Wea Gold Hai ble : any (up) 3011 pro Ar Ho 701 H the fu an fir be 11 · Ma-

With. Prin-

tiani-

good

Huf-

ain'd

the

Vir-

ther

nuch

00d

rely, orld

it fic

Hufpard

g of

dly, uld

n of the

the

eak

the

ear

2.

2772

ess

or

0-

y-

re

15

directing the Women how to appear in publick, when they came to Church, and not to be giving any Rules of habiting themselves in general; and therefore he inlarges on them in this manner: Do you (faith he) come to gray to God, cloathed in Gold and with Embroideries? Are you not rather come to dance, or to make up the Number at a Wedding, or to see some fine Sight? There your Gold, there your Embraideries, there your plaited Hair, and there your coftly Apparel, may be seasonable: But here, at Church, there is no need or use of any such things: You are come bither to intreat and Supplicate for Pardon of your Sins, and intercede for your Offences; to address to God, and render him propitious to you, and do you then adorn your felf? Are these the Tokens, this the Habit of a Supplicant? How can you figh, or weep, or pray with Fervency, whilft thus arrayed? It will but look like Acting and Hypocrify; for such Attire and Serrow suit but ill together. With a great deal more to the like purpole, fuited very well to the Customs of his own Times, and, it may be, to the Lent-season in particular. But fince the Usages of Christian Countries have long while been otherwife, and that putting on the best Apparel was defign'd to do some Honour to the Lord's-Day, and that it might be observ'd with all the external Tokens of Respect, as well as with the internal Honour and Esteem, and Worthip of the Mind; it is not only as lawful to be cloath'd with the most ornamental Attire on this, as on any other Day; but it would be an idle, weak Perverseness to change or oppose the Cufrom. And whatever St. Paul's Advice might reter

fer to, there is no reason to think St. Peter, in the Words of the Text, had any eye to the Women's habiting themselves particularly on Sundays, or at the Publick Service of God, otherwise than on

other Days in other Places.

But because these two are the only remarkable Passages in the New Testament, that say any thing concerning the Habit of Christian Women; and upon which they, who amongst us affect a notorious Plainness and Simplicity of Apparel, ground and approve their Practice, and may be tempted to condemn the rest of the World of Pride and sinful Vanity, and of living in Contradiction to the Advice of St. Paul and St. Peter in the Text; it may not be amiss to join them together, in considering this Matter: And to shew, First, what is not the Meaning of them: And, Secondly, what is.

First, What is not to be understood by these Words: And that is, that neither St. Peter, nor St. Paul, are to be understood in the gross and literal Sense, as utterly forbidding the Women to wear any Gold about them, either in Ear-rings, or about their Cloaths; either in Lace, or interwoven or embroidered; and all plaiting of Hair; all Pearls and Jewels, Necklaces, or Bracelets; and all forts of Cloaths, either Linen, Silk, or Woollen, that come to a great deal of Money, and are costly: They are not to be understood in the strict and literal Sense, for these Reasons: Ift. The Nature of the thing requires it not: Nor, 2dly, the Way and Manner of Expression: Nor, 3dly, the End and Design of the Apostles: And w ar th

in

O t of

fi

1 the

ien's

or at

n on

able

ling

and

oto-

und

ted

and

to

xt;

in

hat dly,

efe

or

nd

to

35,

er-

r;

or

In

SI

And yet, the Patrons of this great Simplicity of Habit, whilft they ground their Practice and Opinion of its Necessity upon these single Passages, taken in the literal Sense, will not be able to excuse themselves from contradicting the Apostles, if either the Linen, Silk, or Woollen, which they wear, cost considerably; for they are as much forbidden costly Apparel, as Gold, and Pearls, and broidering of the Hair, by these Apostles: And fine Linen and fine Woollen are equally coftly, with relation to, and in comparison of, coarse Linen and coarfe Woollen, as Gold and Pearls are, with relation to fine Linen and fine Woollen, in their feveral degrees.

Not that these People are blameable, in any wife, for this their Plainness of Attire, (for Men and Women are entirely at their liberty to habit themselves as plainly as they please) but that they ought not to ground the Necessity of doing fo upon these Texts; and much less ought they to accuse and condemn of Pride, and sinful Vanity, fuch as go, to appearance, in more gay and coftly Cloathing: If they avoid these two Offences, the Necessity of going so plain themselves arising from the Scriptures, and the condemning of others who do not fo attire themselves, they may do as they fee fit in this matter: And though the mistaking these Scriptures will, of itself, do them no harm, yet the censuring other People will; and that does so easily follow from mistaking the Scriptures, that it were better they would throughly confider them; and then they would find, that neither they themselves do, nor any else can, conform in Practice

to the literal Sense of the Words of St. Peter and St. Paul.

But fince I am not speaking to them, but to such as understand them better; and yet (I hope) are full as good Wives, and much truer Christians: I will now go on to shew, that these Advices and Instructions are not to be literally understood. And, First, the Nature of the thing requires it not; no Body can discern any greater Danger and Malignance in Gold and coftly Apparel, than in any other Metal, other Stones, or coarfer Gar-Whether it be the Wisdom, or Folly, or the Fancy of People, that has fet a greater Value on these things than on others, is no matter; there is certainly no greater Evil in one than another; they are all, in their own Natures, alike innocent: And though they prove fometimes the Occasions of great Mischiefs, yet they are never properly the Causes of them; but the Passions and Defires of People towards them, who, to compass them, will take Courses which must consequently produce mischievous Effects. They are, in this case, not unlike to good Countries that border on the Kingdoms of two mighty Princes, who, finding their Convenience, fall to Wars about them, although the Countries gave no Provocation or Encouragement to either. If the Weight, or Lustre, or their Rarity, give these things any extraordinary Excellence above others, the Delight and Pleasure People take therein is but reafonable; and whatever Evils follow thence, are by no means chargeable upon those inanimate things themselves, but on the Men that cause them: And And Light nels i of Fo they quer B

> fond lute No Me any

Efte

ple'

run

Can m is

use

co of V

lu

1

And these things naturally are no worse than Light and Lustre in the Sun, Shape and Comeliness in a Tree, or Beauty, Fragrance, and Variety of Form and Colour, in the Flowers and Herbs; they are all of them God's Creatures, and conse-

quently good.

and

fuch

are

lns:

and

od.

and

n in

rar-

or

lue

er;

10-

111-

he

rer

nd

11-

le-

e,

at

s,

it i-

t,

But supposing they acquire their Value and Efteem from the Opinion of the World, and People's Fancies, and that this be ill-grounded, and run out into a blameable Excess; yet 'tis not reafonable to think that they are all of them abfolutely prohibited, because Men entertain false Notions of, and are deceiv'd in them: For, first, Men have as much true Reason to value these, as any other material things whatever: If we can judge of Beauty, or of Usefulness, they are as useful and as beautiful, as any other Parts of God's Creation: But whatever they are in themselves, and however Men may be mistaken in their Judgments of them; yet as the World was formerly, is now, and always will be ordered, it is ablolutely necessary that some things should be accounted of greater Excellence and Value than others: There could be otherwise no living in the World; no Trade or Commerce could be entertain'd, without fuch Change and Bargain. And if the Wisdom of all the World, in all Ages, has centred in this, that fuch and fuch things should be accounted best, and valued highest, it is a great Prefumption that they are truly the most excellent and valuable things of the Creation; but 'tis a downright Demonstration, that it is necessary to account them fo: And that fuch Opinion is well enough grounded,

grounded, because 'tis absolutely necessary that something should be reckoned best, and better than another; and nothing has, at any time, prevail'd above these things, in civiliz'd Countries.

And though it should be objected, That the Indians parted with their Gold and Pearls, for Glass and Trifles, to their first Discoverers; yet it would not from thence follow, that what the common Esteem of Mankind makes valuable, is not truly fo: For though Glass and Gold are of equal value to a Man that neither uses, nor knows how to make use of either, yet to one that does both, they are very unequal: And when the Indians knew how much their Traders valued Gold, and what a deal of Glass, and other gaudy things were purchasable by a little Gold, they grew wifer, and learnt the Excellency of it; though, at the same time, we must own, that if all the World should set a Stamp of Value upon Glass, or any thing besides, it must be as valuable as Gold itself: Which shews, that these things are not here forbidden by St. Peter or St. Paul, either because they are worthless in their own Nature, or because we have fet too great a Value on them: They are as good and innocent as any other things; and therefore there is nothing in the Nature of them, from whence we may conclude they are absolutely prohibited.

Nor, Secondly, from the Way and Manner of Expression here us'd, although it seem to be absolutely negative; for so it is in a world of places in the Scriptures: So Matth. 6. 19. Lay not up for your selves Treasures upon the Earth, where Moth

and I throughures fures very Mean hibit

> Eart mak mad treat

> > or S

mer

Existence the lati

bite

tha fec the Th

> Ca ca th

> > fe in

T

and Rust doth corrupt, and where Thieves break through and steal; but lay up for your schoes Treasures in Heaven. Here, though the Expression be very positive, or absolutely negative; yet the Meaning of these Words is not absolutely to prohibit People the laying up Treasures here on Earth, for the Necessities and Duties of Life do make it unavoidable: There can be no Provision made for Families and Children, without fuch treasuring; there can be no such thing as Stock, or Substance; no such thing as Trade and Commerce, unless some People do it to be ready at an Exigence: And unless we can imagine Christ intended to forbid the Merchandize and Traffick of the World, or the Provision for Families and Relations, we must not think he absolutely prohibited the laying up Treasures here on Earth, although the Injunction be expressed in very absolute and positive Terms. But the Meaning is, that Christians should be more intent upon the fecuring everlafting Happiness to themselves, than the short and perishable Riches of this World: That they should not lay out so much Time and Care, and Pains in gathering Treasures here, that are subject to so many Changes, and of which they can at best be Masters but a very little time, to the Neglect of Heavenly Things; in whose Posfession there is not only everlasting Happiness, but in whose Loss there is eternal Misery: There is no manner of comparison betwixt these two Treasures; and therefore lay not up the one, until you have secur'd the other: And so St. Matth. 9. 13. I will have Mercy, and not Sacrifice: Which, being

that tter

ore-. the

for t it the

is of WS

es di-

d, 1-

at ne or

d e e

e e

being spoken by God under the Jewish Dispensation, cannot be understood of God's absolutely refusing and disliking Sacrifices, which he himself fo frequently commanded, in the Law of Moses, to be offered constantly and solemnly before, and to him: But the Meaning is, I will have Mercy rather than Sacrifice, if they should come in competition; I will not be defrauded of one, under pretence of the other; I'll have them both in their proper Seafons: But should there be an occasion of Preference, the shewing Mercy is more agreeable to Me than Sacrifice; Ilike the fulfilling that Command of mine, which does an Act of Love and Kindness to another, better than fulfilling that Command which only shews an Instance of Obedience to Me, and has no other Good belonging to it. And so it is in Hosea 6.6. from whence it is taken; I defired Mercy, not Sacrifice; and the Knowledge of God, more than Burnt-offerings; where not, in the first place, is explain'd by more in the fecond. And fo our Saviour understands it in the Application, for I came not to call the Righteons, but Sinners to Repentance. They had objected to him, his eating and converfing with Publicans and Sinners; and he tells them, that his chief Defign was to convert all fuch from the Evil of their Ways; that his Errand was rather to them than others; they wanted his Afistance most, and therefore they should have it: Not but that he came to call those he names Righteous, as well as those whom they call'd Sinners; for there were no fuch People as Righteous, for all Men wanted him, and all Men must come to him by Repentance; but

want which It is Body fon v for € Ball ble t quar drin neft Mea Life but 12. lay 1 dren and are: rent Feel ther drei it,

So

not

five

a di

to !

ext

Wo

but

nfa-

tely

felf

les.

and

rcy

nı-

der

leir

ion

ce-

hat

ove

ing

10

19-

ice

the

Tr;

in

111

115,

to

nd

gn

eir'

an

e-

ne

le

ch

11,

It

but the more the Sins, the more the Sinners wanted him: So Matth. 10. 28. Fear not them which kill the Body, but are not able to kill the Soul. It is impossible not to fear such as can kill the Body; but we must not fear the one in comparifon with the other, who can make us miserable for ever. So Luke 12. 29. Seek ye not what ye hall eat, or what ye shall drink; which is impossible to be understood, positively, by at least three quarters of the World, who must neither eat nor drink at all, unless they seek it, and seek it in earnest too, with Toil and great Pains: But the Meaning is, they must not seek the Things of this Life with more Anxiety than they are worth, but rather feek the Kingdom of God. So 2 Cor. 12. 14. St. Paul fays, The Children ought not to lay up for the Parents, but the Parents for the Children; which must not be understood generally, and without referve: For in many cases Children are unquestionably obliged to lay up for the Parents; where they are quite disabled by Age, or Feebleness, or other cause, from taking care of themselves. The Meaning is, it is more usual and more natural for Parents to provide for Children, than the contrary; and not at all to forbid it, where 'tis necessary, decent, or convenient. So Prov. 20. 13. & 23.4. Love not Sleep; Labour not to be rich; i.e. do nothing of that kind exceffively; do all things moderately: Shew yourlest a diligent and careful Man; but be not a Slave to Ease and Idleness, nor yet to Labour and extream Pains for the perishing Goods of this World. And so, lastly, 1 John 2. 15. Love not the

the World, neither the things that are in the World This is a very absolute Injunction in Words, but altogether impossible to be practised in the literal and first Sense of them of for Men cannot help loving themselves, and several other things that are in the World: But the Meaning is, that Men must not love any thing in this World compara. tively with God; i. e. fo as not to part with it. if he commands us; so as not to prefer our Obe. dience, and the Duty we owe to him, before all other worldly Things besides, though never lo useful and advantageous, never so delightful to us. So that from all these Passages, which I have taken occasion to explain, and from many other I omit, it appears, that though a Prohibition or Command may be express'd in general, and very positive Terms, yet it is not always so to be understood, without Exception and Reserve! There is a Sense of Reason and Equity to be inquired

Place, and Person, must determine.

And if there be any one general Rule to know when this negative Particle not is to be universally exclusive of all degrees whatever, belonging to the Thing prohibited, it may perchance be this, where-ever the Things prohibited are naturally and in themselves unlawful. So Rom. 13.13. Not in Rioting and Drunkenness, not in Chambering and Wantonness; not in Strife and Envyings. Here the Things are in themselves unlawful and abominable, and therefore there is no Exception to be made; no degree of them is lawful, or to be admitted; they are all, and every of them, stark

after, which the Circumstances of Time, and

naught,

naugh neral, ter of cent, hibite the W Thin bited from prohi Gold not n the 1 gener politi Natu accid feen : gene Exce

> Sense N these from and reco wou tians session

as w but Offe naught, and therefore certainly prohibited in general, and without referve. But where the Matter of the Prohibition is in its own nature innocent, and perfectly indifferent, and becomes prohibited because of some abuse of it; there, tho' the Words of the Prohibition be general, yet the Thing can be no farther understood to be prohibited than it is abus'd, or as far as may guard it from abuse.", So though St. Peter, and St. Paul, prohibited Women plaited or broidered Hair, and Gold and Pearls, and coffly Array, yet are they not necessarily to be understood to prohibit them the Use and Ornament of any of those things in general, tho the Injunction be express'd in very politive Terms; because there is nothing, in their Natures, evil; but what is evil, is by abuse, and accidentally become so; and because we have feen a great many places of Scriptures express'd as generally and absolutely as these, and yet to bear Exceptions and Referves, and a more limited Sense.

Nor, Thirdly, is it absolutely necessary that all these Things should absolutely be forbidden, from the Design and Purpose of these two Saints and Apostles, which seems to be principally the recommending such Things to the Women, as would make them good Wives and good Christians, Good Works, and such as became People professing Christianity (as we shall see in due time) and secondarily such decent, grave, external Habit, as would answer and become those good Works; but such especially as would give no Scandal and Offence, nor minister Temptations to another.

M 2

Now

but iteral help that Men

th it, Obere all er fo

para-

thers

very e un-

here uired and

now iverong-

te be fatu-

ering Here

abo-

o be tark

ight,

Now fuch Defign is no way obstructed by a moderate and well-regulated Use of all or any of these Ornaments; and therefore there is neither Need nor Reason to conclude that all, nor any of these Particulars here mentioned, are universally absolutely forbidden to Women, either from the Nature of the Things themselves, or from the Way and Manner of Expression; or lastly, from the End propos'd both by St. Peter and St. Paul: All these are secur'd, although the Words be taken in a laxer and more moderate Sense.

But though it may be reasonable enough to think these Words of both Apostles (which I join together, because they are so liked to, and explain, one another) are not to be understood literally and strictly; yet something is undoubtedly forbidden thereby; and what that is, it may be fit to know; which was the fecond Thing I intended to consider; after having shewn what should not be understood by these negative Instructions concerning outward Ornaments and Habits.

And, first, we may reasonably conclude, that St. Peter and St. Paul would be understood to forbid all fuch Gaiety and Costliness of Attire, as certainly minister to Pride, and foster Vanity. There is no Body doubts but every thing finful, and tending to God's Dishonour, is here prohibited; and if either Newness, Rarity, and Costliness of Habit, occasion Pride and Vanity, it is certainly here condemn'd. The truth of it is, it feems difficult to conceive what kind of Pride it is, that can be rais'd in People's Minds on these

'tis e here whi Gol fion of I and thei thin mo and WQ the isf it; be do no m W in m

accol

of th

to do

othe

be

accounts;

which

accounts; how they can come to think more highly a moof themselves than others, and than they ought iny of to do, because they have other Cloaths, and are either otherwise drest than they are. But whatever it is, any of 'tis evident, that the Effect, and not the Cause, is erfally here prohibited, fince the Cause is everything by m the which the Fancy is blown up: And it is not only n the Gold and Pearls, and costly Apparel, that occafrom fion this disordered Fancy, and this foolish Vanity Paul: of Heart, but any thing that People put a Value be taand Esteem upon, and think it raises them above their Neighbours: For it is not the Richness of a gh to thing that is always the Ground of its Esteem: nich I If a thing of leffer Price be more fashionable, 'tis , and more defired, and more valued by the Wearer; flood and if loofe and flowing Hair were modifh, it oubtwould then occasion more Pride and Vanity, than may the plaiting or the broidering it would do. This I inis so well known to all, that I need not infift upon what it; that the things that cost most, do not please e Inbest, if they be not also fashionable; and if they and do not please, and are not fashionable, they are not so apt to create that secret vain Complacence that in the Mind, which arises from the Conceit, that d to what they wear becomes them best, and sets them e, as in a Rank above their Neighbour. So that 'tis nity. manifest this kind of Pride, whatever 'tis, is not ful, grounded upon Costliness or Worth, but upon ohi-Decency and Modishness; so that People would Costbe proud of Toys and Tinfel, Straws and Rushes, it is if the Court and City brought them into fashion, , it and would use them publickly. And fince 'tis e it Pride and Haughtiness, and vain Conceits of Mind, iele

its;

which the Scriptures intend to forbid and check, 'tis manifest that Gold and Pearls, and costly Array,' and plaited Hair, are not the Things particularly spoken against, any farther than they prove the Occasions of that Pride and Vanity. And since other meaner things, if fashionable and in use, occasion them as commonly and certainly as the more costly things; and that something or other must be us'd and fashionable, it sollows very near demonstrably, that Pride and Vanity are the Effects, and things that are prohibited; and neither Gold, nor Pearls, nor broider'd Hair, nor

coffly Attire.

And what is faid for the Matter and Substance of Attire, is also as true for the Manner or Fashion of, it, that no one particular Mode either is, or can possibly be forbidden or prescrib'd, as that which necessarily and unavoidably either occasions or prevents this Pride and Vanity; because it is not this or that particular Fashion or Dress that only occasions Pride or Vanity, for another Dress does the fame thing when 'tis become the Fashion: And tis a weak thing to imagine, that fuch a Fashion is the troudest Fashion that ever was, for People are alike proud in all Fashions: And few or none were ever proud of their Attire and Dress, if at the same time they thought it out of Fashion, or did not wear it in spite and opposition to the Fashion: And therefore 'tis reasonable enough to conclude, that what Pride arises on the account of Dreffing, is owing chiefly to the Opinion People have, that what they wear is modifi and becoming; and therefore all Fashions are very and C think confi thing Some. if on anot and muf the thin moi the Faf lear gin pro all Co or va M Fa

ha

fir

be

near

near a

to rais

Spirit

appar

this fo

if no

near alike hazardous, one as the other, and as apt to raife the Pride and Vanity of weak and trifling Spirits. If Fashion, then, be the most obvious and apparent Ground of Vanity, and the Foundation of this foolish Pride, it must certainly be reasonable, if not abfolutely necessary, to avoid Conformity and Compliance with the Fashion. So one would think, indeed, at first; but when you come to confider it, it is otherwise, and would fignify nothing at all; for what is absolutely necessary to some, upon this account, is as necessary to all: For if one must not be proud and vain, neither must another be so; and if one must avoid the common and the ordinary occasion, so must another, and so must all. But now it is impossible for all to avoid the Fashion; for if all avoid it, how could any thing be the Fashion? And that which all, or most agree in, and consent to, will be necessarily the Fashion; so that all People's avoiding the Fashion, would be only setting up another Fashion, if they all agreed or fell into one and the fame; or leaving every one to their own Devices and Imaginations; which would occasion as much (and 'tis probable a great deal more of) Pride, than their all agreeing in one. Upon the whole matter, the Confent in general of most Wearers makes a Dress or Habit fashionable; and when that has once prevail'd, it unavoidably becomes the Standard and Measure of Decency: And when we think a Fashion aukward or unbecoming, it is because we have not long enough been us'd to it, or do not find it generally approv'd, or because it has long been laid aside: But to think it sinful to follow a Fashion M 4

heck, ly Ar. parti. prove

And nd in nlyas ig or

very e the nej-

nor

ance hion or that

ons t is hat

efs n:

for W

nd of

n le

re i-h

Fashion because new, and conform to Custom in these cases, is, to set up our own Imagination against the whole World's, not only of our own Time, but of all foregoing Generations, whole Modes and Garbs have all along been very dif. ferent: And though some appear more antick and extravagant than others, yet that proceeds rather from a Fondness for our own Conceits and Cultoms, and a liking to what we have been us'd to. in our own Nations and Times, than from any true Grounds in Nature or in Reason. But to conclude that one Fashion is more proud and finful than another, argues some fort of Weakness of Judgment, or Want of Consideration. some fort of Fashions do not minister more to Wantonness and Immodesty than others, and take up much more time, and hinder People from doing the Good they would otherwise do (which I shall afterwards consider) but that one Fashion is prouder than another, is not at all evident, tho it is commonly thought fo.

It is not for us to appear as Advocates for any of these Matters; but when things are generally decried, without any Reason or good Foundation, even good and honest People come to be scandalized at they know not what, nor why: And Scruples are begotten in some weak Minds, which they cannot afterwards get easily rid of; and when some have mistaken themselves into a Compliance with the literal Sense of these Injunctions, they fall (as I said) into an uncharitable Censoriousness of such as are not like minded. Till therefore People can discover the Unreasonableness,

O!

or t

ton

finf of

col

cer

thi

th

th

bo

p

or the Unlawfulness of complying with the Cuftoms of the Times, which are not in themselves finful, or till they can discover a better Standard of Decency than the general Confent of People, I fee no reason to judge otherwise, than that the common and accustom'd Garb and Attire is innocent and fafe. It may, indeed, become the occafion of People's Pride and Vanity, but so may any thing besides; and therefore when People find themselves exalted by such Trisles, and cur'd by their removal, they are oblig'd to leave, and change them presently: For even the best Endowments both of Body and Mind, are no sufficient Plea, or reasonable Excuse, for an extraordinary Conceit of our felves, or for Contempt of others; and much less any vain and gay Attire, that is truly none of ours, but borrowed from the Earth and Sea, and Birds and Beafts, and little ugly Infects, and only serve to cover and conceal our Imperfections and Deformities,

And truly, Virtue and good Qualities must needs run very low, when People feek for Honour and Esteem from such poor Vanities as these; and scorn, and injure too, perhaps, their Neighbours, for the want of them; of which, if they had but little more, they would envy them; and, if a great deal, hate them downright. Not that every Act of Complacence in Apparel, or every Thought that fuch and fuch a thing becomes them better than another, and liking it, on that account, is therefore a Sin, or finful; but the Excess of fuch Complacence, and the fetting a greater Esteem upon themselves, and a less on others than is due upon thele

om in ation r own whole ry dif. k and

rather Cul s'd to, y true confinful ess of t that

re to take i doich I on is

tho'

any rally tion, ndacruhich and

omons, nfo-Till

ess, OI.

these simple accounts, which elate the Hearts of foolish Creatures with idle Fancies, vain Imaginations, and Conceits of Dignity and Honour, and withdraw them from more grave and ferious Objects, on which they might and should be better employed. It appears, therefore, from the whole, that the Apostles do not design to forbid to Women altogether the use of Gold, or Pearls, or costly Attire, the broidering or the plaiting of the Hair; neither from the Nature of things themfelves, which are not evil, but indifferent, and either innocent or evil as they are us'd; nor from the Manner of Expression, tho' it look like negative and universal, since a great many other Passages are full as absolute and universal, that yet must needs be taken in a restrain'd and equitable Sense: Nor, lastly, from their main Design; which is to let the Women know, what are the truest Ornaments and Honours of their Sex, Good Qualities, and Good Works; and that their first and principal Care should be, to secure that main Point, which will recommend them both to God and Man, and make them useful in their Generations; that whatever Value and Esteem the idle and the inconsiderate part of Mankind may have put upon Attire and Drefs, yet that there is no true Worth in any fuch Appearances: That it is indeed become neceffary to do as is commonly done; but that the Commendation, that arises thence, is not at all defirable, or any ways beneficial; and that, of all things in the World, they have the least reason to be proud and vain on these accounts, since even the Beauty, and the Comeliness they aim at in these Drefles,

Drefuc fuc bot mo

no who Co fco we the man an an

T the plant in

CO

th

th

an A

TV P

Dresses, (if they should really attain it) were no such mighty prize; a sickly Creature of the Fancy, born and nourish'd unaccountably, and lost by Hu-

mour, or a thousand Accidents.

of

na-

nd

b-

ter

le,

0-

At-

he

n-

ei-

m

1-

la-

ist

e:

ęt

its

nd

al

nd

t-

i-

re

ıy

e-

le

11

0

le

e

S,

HOUSE

The first Thing, therefore, that is meant, is, that no one should be proud of their Apparel; and that whoever finds herfelf exalted to undue and unufual Conceits of her own Worth, or inclin'd thereby to fcorn, and to despise another, because not clad so well or richly as herfelf, offends against the Apoftles Rules, and is oblig'd to Repentance; and to make the Experiment, whether a meaner Garb. and other Dress, will not abate her Haughtiness, and cloath her with Good-nature and Humility, and other such good Qualities and Graces, as become those who profess Godliness. What is farther understood to be prohibited the Women, in the Apostles Rules, and what moreover are the Things here recommended to them, in order to their pleasing God, and those they are oblig'd to please of Men, will require some other Opportunity to speak to: In the mean time, let them remember, that the business of Apparel is not so inconsiderable, but that the Apostle, both of Few's and Gentiles, thought convenient to give their Advice and Rules concerning it, when they were treating of the Duty of Wives to their Husbands; which is the Defign I have now in hand, and shall profecute in the following Discourses.

s, that they were undo aboutly inclided

be being though and value and Self-concered, $R \Gamma \Phi = 0$

DISCOURSE IX.

up

no

bi

F

fi

I PETER III. VERSES 3, 4.

Whose adorning, let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the Hair, and of wearing of Gold, or of putting on of Apparel: But let it be the hidden Man of the Heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the Ornament of a meek and quiet Spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

Having shewn already, both from the Nature of the Things themselves, and from the Way and Manner of Expression, and the Defign both of St. Peter here, and of St. Paul in 1 Tim, 2.9. that Women neither were, nor well could be, absolutely forbidden the Use and Ornament of all the particular Things mentioned by them; but that they were left indifferent to People, and to be regulated by them, as they should see convenient, both as to the Matter and Manner, to Substance and to Fashion, by Prudence and Discretion, so as never to become, by either Defign or natural Necessity, the Instruments or Occasions of Sin: I had only Time (in speaking to the second Head; which was to shew, what was to be understood by these Rules of both Apostles concerning Ornament and Habit, I had only Time) to mention one Particular; and that was, that they were undoubtedly forbidden the being Proud and Vain, and Self-conceited, and the despising, and treating others Injuriously nbou

upon the account of Cloaths, and Drefs. I am now to proceed to other Particulars, which we may reasonably presume the Apostles intend to prohibit to Christian Women, and good Wives.

ning

old,

the

not

and

Va-

om De-

in

rell

Dr-

ned

to

ley

ter by

ie,

uin

w,

of

it, id

ņ

d,

I

In the fecond Place, therefore, all fuch Attire as serves to Loosness and Immodesty, is here forbidden; and this, not only if it be design'd to ferve fuch wicked Purpofes, but also if it have a natural, an easy, or an usual Tendency that way. First, to be sure it is forbidden, if design'd to fuch an evil Purpose; because the Design itself is so abominable, the heating of the Fancies, and inflaming the Hearts of heedless and impetuous Youth, and kindling and exciting those impure Defires, that will at last consume both Soul and To dress with this design, is, to be sure, Body. not only blameable, but damnable, without Repentance; 'tis the worst they can do, and all they can do, for nothing is wanting, on their fide, to compleat the Sin. And as the Defign's takeing effect does not at all depend on them, so neither will its missing its effect excuse them, or diminish ought of either Guilt or Punishment.

But what shall be determin'd of them, who do not dress with this abominable Purpose, but only with defign of appearing Gracious and Lovely in the fight of People, and to gain Affection and Good-will? Why, the Rule in general may be this; that the designing any thing, in Mind and Wish, is more or less innocent, according as the Thing defign'd is more or less inpocent in it felf, and would be, should it take

effect:

effect; so that if to appear Gracious and Lovely, be in it self good, or bad, or indifferent, the designing to appear so (whether it take effect or no) will be good, or bad, or indifferent, accordingly. And therefore whoever would know, how far she may innocently dress with this design, must ask her self what she intends, what she desires that Grace and Comeliness for, and what use she designs to make of People's Approbation, or their Admiration of her; and according as that is better or worse, so will her Dressing and Adorning of her self be more or less innocent.

Some of the Ancients (S. Cl. of Alex. 1. 3. 11. Tertul. de Cult. Fam. 2. 4.) feem to allow the Wives a greater liberty in Dreffing, than to other fingle People; but they fay, it should be only where tis fairly probable, at least, that the Affections of the Husbands cannot otherwise be easily retain'd; but they do at the same time reproach the Folly and the Lightness of those Men, who confidered fuch Appearances more than the true and only Ornaments, the Virtues and good Qualities of Women: And they restrain the Wives appearing handsomer than ordinary to the Hufbands only; which may indeed be done in the defigh, but not as to the effects which will have influence upon other People alfo. But though there may be something of Reason in satisfying some Desires; yet it cannot be a Rule of any great Security or Prudence; because some Hulbands may be light, and wanton, and fantaftical themselves, and their Fancies prove but weak and simple Guides: And though they should be

per-

perm

to they

fuch

or p

a na

and

Gro

are

and

ceff

to

the

min Pre

rat

fal

for

có

no

uf

ah

pe

q

n

n

It

permitted to take a greater liberty with respect to their Husbands, and the pleasing them; yet because they live and converse with other People; they are prohibited (as well as other Women) such Dress, as, though they should design to hurt or please no Body at all; yet may have, in it self, a natural, easie, or an usual Tendency to Evil, and minister Temptations to another.

the

or rd-

W

n,

he

iat

n,

25

nd

I.

ie

er

ly

C-

y

e

It is prefum'd that all Men act upon some Grounds, and that our Reason and other Faculties are given on purpole to direct and govern us in all our Actions, and to confider with them Caufest and Effects, Actions and Events, natural and neceffary, probable and accidental, fuch as are like to be, and fuch as may possibly be; and from these Abilities of considering, judging and determining, arises the Guilt and Condemnation of Precipitancy, Heedlefness, and Acting inconfident rately. And as a Man is pitied reasonably, that falls into Misfortunes which he could not possibly foresee, nor possibly prevent; but blam'd and condemn'd, that fuffers what he neither needed, nor should have done: So is a Man or Woman excusid, for what Events are accidental and unusual from their Acts, but blameable and chargeable with fuch Events as might be reasonably expected; and were both natural and easily confequential of fuch their Actions, although they thought not on them, or at least design'd them not. When Men take the proper, natural and ready Means to the attaining of an End, and fuchi as could not probably miscarry, and such as they must needs have taken chad they purposedly defign'd

fign'd that End; it will be still presum'd that they intended it, whether they did or no. And fo it is in the Matter before us; although a Garb and Fashion should not be at all design'd to serve to any evil and immodest Purposes; yet if it naturally did fo, if it were fuch as easily might minister Temptations to unwary forward Hearts, to heated and depraved Imaginations, and raise unclean Idea's in the Minds of ill-dispos'd People, it were undoubtedly unlawful: Such Garb and Fashion must unquestionably be forfaken: There, neither Multitude, nor Quality, nor Custom could excuse: There it would be, that we must not follow a Multitude to do Evil: There, no Examples would avail to an Excuse: There, it would be to no purpose to fay they defign'd no Evil, for 'tis not enough not to design, but they must give no manner of just Occasion of it; and tho' the Parties take not this Occasion as a thing that's offer'd them on purpose, yet if it may be easily and naturally (according to the wicked Inclinations and Propensities of People) taken and laid hold on, it is to be prefum'd and look'd upon as given. Tis true indeed that he is in fault, and shall be punished, that takes the bad Occasion not design'd to be given; but 'tis also true, that she is to be blam'd and shall be punish'd, that ministred so proper and so easie a Temptation.

But if the Garb or Dress be such as cannot easily and naturally tempt, then let the Event be what it will, the Party gave it not, and so is innocent. The short of the Matter in this particular is this; to defign an evil thing is Sin, although you don't effect

effect and th weak Purpo be the a Sin,

> took it; an and I dium

that 1

Conf Bu kind and 1 desty thing Cuft Peop fome and

> pass Occ: conf conc

> Tim

that pret abor

fion thei

obli tal

effect it, because you have done all you could; and therefore, to dress with a design of ensuring weak and sinful Hearts, and to serve immodest Purposes, is most undoubtedly a Sin, whatever be the Effect: And to effect an evil End, may be a Sin, although you don't design it, because you took the proper and the usual Courses to effect it; and because the Effect depends not on Designs and Purposes, but upon natural and proper Mediums; and because you knew, or ought to know, that that was very likely to be the Effect and

Confequence of that your Action.

hey

it is

and

any

did

np-

ind

a's

ın-

ust

ul-

e:

ul-

ld

F-

ot

n-

es

d

1-

d

1,

e

d

But, after all, it is not easy to determine what kind of Garb and Drefs does naturally and eafily, and usually produce these bad Effects; for Modefty, and Shame it felf, is, in many Cafes, fomething relative, and depends upon Usages and Customs of Places, and the Consent of such a People: And that, which is accounted Modesty in fome Countries, is lightly regarded in another; and the Opinions of the same Nation alter by Time and Circumstances, so that People may pass too hasty and unkind a Censure upon these Occasions, unless they give themselves leave to confider: And yet, for all that, the Parties most concern'd are not left in fuch Uncertainties, but that they may, if they will fet about it, guess pretty tolerably, and fafely to be fure, whereabouts the Danger lies, from whence the Occation of Temptation rifes; and are, according to their Knowledge, and the best of their Guess, oblig'd to remove the Occasion, to stop those fatal Inlets of Temptations, what soever they be; or else they will most certainly offend against the Apostles Rules, which do at least forbid such Garb and Dress to Christian Women, as either naturally or designedly serve to Immodesty and Looseness in themselves, or minister Temptations to another.

Thirdly, All such Attire and Dress, as spends and takes up too much Time, may reasonably be presum'd to be forbidden, because our Time is given to better Purposes; it is not, properly speaking, our own; but so much is to be expended on Things absolutely necessary, and so much on Things profitable and convenient for us, and none

at all on Things hurtful.

The Confideration of the great Work that every one has to do, of the uncertain Continuance of the Time we have to do it in, of the Diverfions and Impediments we daily meet with, from the necessary Business, the Corruptions of our Hearts, and the Temptations of this World, have wrought fo powerfully and deeply on the Hearts of many People in all Ages, that they have quite abandon'd all the World, sequestred themfelves from all Company, and Bufiness, and given themselves entirely up to God, devoting themfelves to Prayers and Praifes, and Repentance. Now as many of these People are not over-hastily to be condemn'd, so neither are they over-hastily to be imitated; for it hath pleas'd God to make the Duties, and the Businesses of Life, the Instances of our Obedience; and whilst we are dilcharging them, with Care and Honesty, we are truly ferving God, and fulfilling his Commands.

And w World only fl of Vir certain more in Act

is much and be which anothe

The ration ing P Work to He to fpe thoug canno Rules for th may and f fion, a becon deter culars one, to do shoul in we

and !

great

the

earb

atu-

ofe-

s to

ends

y be

e is

ak-

on

on

one

that

nce

ver-

om

our

rld,

the

ave

m-

ven

m-

ce.

tily

ily

ke

In-

lif-

ire

ds.

nd

And when People fly from the Affairs of the World to Solitude and Contemplation only, they only shew that their Opinion is, that the Theory of Virtue is equal to the Practice of it, which is certainly a Mistake: And though there may be more Pleasure to one's self in Speculation, than in Action; yet certainly the Exercise of Virtues is much more beneficial to the rest of Mankind, and better answers all the Purposes of Religion, which are, to honour God, and profit one another.

The Use that I would make of this Consideration is, that the more thoughtful and confidering People are, the mighty and momentous Work of their Salvation will the more be laid to Heart; and the less Time they will be fure to spend in trifling and in needless Matters: And though, it may be, all the Art and Skill of Man cannot lay down certain, general, or particular Rules, how much Time is absolutely necessary for the discharging such a Duty, and how much may fafely and innocently be bestowed on such and fuch Purposes, what is sufficient for Diverfion, and relaxing of the Mind, and when Leifure becomes criminal; though it be impossible to determine with Exactness in any of these Particulars for another, yet it is not so hard for any one, that is but tolerably careful, and inclinable, to do it in their own Case; and yet they should not use too great Exactness and Nicety in weighing these Matters, fince there is no need, and Scruples may too eafily arife, which are of great Trouble, and no Use. Let People consider N 2

that they have much to do, and that is absolute. ly necessary to be done; and much, that is more confiderable than this they are about; and that too little Time, expended on adorning and fetting out themselves, is much more tolerable and safe. than too much, and they will want no great Advice in these Cases, nor much offend by sucha Negligence: They must needs determine for themfelves in all these Matters; and they may doit fafely on the better fide, to be fure; fo that the Rule, in this Cafe, is both fhort and eafy. It is unlawful certainly to bestow that Time on dreffing and adorning one's felf, that is due to God and Religion; that should be spent in worshipping and ferving him, and that is given on purpose to us, to secure our everlasting Interest with him; or that which is owing to our Neighbours, our Relations, or our felves, in the feveral States of Life, and in the different Respects we have to them all. So that not only the Time that is taken from God, but from any one elfe we are oblig'd to ferve and care for, is mispent, and ill bestowed on these unprofitable Exercises. And though a Woman may be constant in her Prayers, and Reading, or what other Spiritual Exercises she may be put upon; yet it is not enough, if the employ those Hours on tricking and adorning her felf, that are due to the Discharge of the Office of a good Wife, or Parent, or the Mistress of a Fa-For these are all of them Duties, and must be paid, and will not be excus'd, whereas the other might be better spar'd: It is not only an Imprudence, but a faulty Neglect in any Wo-

man, and d to be of he her S

Rela

both by it doin by C wha are oug For Rea abfo

We any cau An mu

are

usc

bed rita per ful

ce re

11

man,

man, to give that Time to Idleness and Vanity,

folutes s more and that fetting

at Adfuch a themy do it

It is a drefor God or shipn purt with bours, tes of

them from ferve d on Wo-

may ploy felf,

of a Fa-

and creas only

Wonan, and dreffing up her felf; which might, and ought to be employed, in looking after the Concerns of her Husband and Family, her Children and her Servants; which is the End and Business of her Relation, as a Wife.

Fourthly, We may reasonably presume, that both St. Peter and St. Paul forbid such Dress as

both St. Peter and St. Paul forbid fuch Dress, as by its Costliness prevents and hinders People from doing that Good which they might otherwise do, by Charity, in its feveral Instances: Not that whatever Money is expended on Things, that are only pleafant and delightful, is ill spent, or ought to have been bestowed on Charitable Uses: For that's an Opinion that has neither Truth nor Reason in it; for many Things, that are neither absolutely necessary, nor yet so strictly convenient, but that one may well be without them, are yet exceeding lawful, and indifferent to be us'd, or let alone, as People see fit. Otherwise it would be unlawful to do any thing in the World almost but Alms; no one must purchase any thing, but what was absolutely necessary, because the Superfluity might be better employ'd: And even of things absolutely necessary, no one must take the better, when the worse will serve, because the Surplusage of Price might serve to Charitable Uses; and the Mind would be perpetually perplex'd. And fometimes the innocent and lawful Pleasures of this Life, are in a manner necessary to the sweetning of Men's Cares, to the relaxing of their Minds, and to the making Life it self go down with any tolerable Relish; but it

N 3

is

is the Excess of any thing of this Nature that is blameable, it is the Extremity of things that is to be avoided. And in the particular Matter be. fore us, it is that excessive Costliness of Apparel, that difables People from expending any thing on good Uses, that ought to be condemn'd. When the Woman carries the Fortune of a Family about her, and almost labours under the weight and pressure of her Ornaments, and is really in some Pain her self, for the fantastick and imaginary Pleasure of thinking she is acceptable to another. This must needs be blameable, because it is choosing to do that, which is, at least, neither necessary, nor convenient, nor commanded, before that which is both excellent, and necessary, and their Duty: Such as the doing Acts of Charity, i.e. Acts of Kindness in their several Relations, and according to their feveral Qualities and Abilities; for fince Charity and doing Good is the very End of God's bestowing Riches upon People, and the Pretence and Ground of their desiring them, and the best and truest Use they can possibly make of them; they must needs be felf-condemn'd, that hinder themselves from putting Riches to this good Use, by laying them out fo very extravagantly and unprofitably upon themselves; that, to please a vitiated Imagination of their own, and attract the Eyes of others, they, in some sense, defraud so many poor and needy Creatures of the true and folid necessary Comforts of this Life; that sweep the Ground with that, whose Purchase would have cloath'd the Naked, fed the Hungry, fatisfied the Thirsty, and

and of Prison

many of old their their they Light Folk must que to let that many

the with of

and

an '

Aş ne lit fer

Of of m

P

0

and comforted the Hearts of many Sick, and Priloners.

that is

that is

ter be.

pparel

thing

mn'd:

a Fa-

r the

and is

aftick

ccept.

eable,

is, at

com-

, and

Acts

veral

Qua-

oing

ches

heir

they

s be

om

em

up-

na-

ers,

ind

ry

nd

n'd

y,

nd

I do not choose to urge this Matter with the many Instances and Examples of famous Saints of old, who parted with their Garments, fold their Ornaments and Jewels, to feed and cloath their Saviour, in his needy Servants; for though they are glorious Instances, burning and shining Lights; yet they are rather hung to shew where Folks may go, than to direct them where they must. Whatever any one does in this kind, is unquestionably very good, but yet not necessarily to be imitated by those that are not, nor those that are in the same Circumstances; but they may ferve to flew, that, certainly, these excellent and charitable Christians would have thought it an unpardonable Fault, to have bestowed any exceffively fuperfluous Cost upon themselves, when they thereby should be disabled from complying with fo many noble and good-natur'd Precepts of their Lord and Saviour, in behalf of Charity.

Lastly, We may reasonably presume, that the Apostles intended to forbid all such Costliness of Apparel, as exceeds the Quality and Ability of the Wearer. First, Because this is an Offence against Decency, that natural and becoming Order, which both the Wisdom and the Custom of all Times and Places have agreed upon, as most convenient to discriminate and difference People one from another, and, in the matter of Quality, to prevent all Difrespect, Disorder and Confusion. And though an Offence of this kind, barely thus confidered, be not a Sin, indeed, against God;

God; yet, in wife and civiliz'd Nations, this kind of Luxury has more or less been frequently restrain'd by Penal Laws; which shews not only fome Inconvenience, but some kind of Deformity, and natural Indecency to belong to it. But Se. condly, It frequently occasions Poverty to the Family, it exhausts the Gain and Labour of the Calling most unconscionably, when that, which should maintain the House, and keep the Children, and support the Trade and Credit of Men, is trifled off in Shew and gay Appearance, not only to the Shame and great Difgrace, but to the Ruine (often) of the Husbands. It breaks the Heart of Induftry, to fee its Fruits squandred so lavishly away, fo fimply, and fo foon, by light and wanton Fancies: And when Men see the End of all their Toils fo near, they are frequently tempted to a careless and a desperate Ill-husbandry: Besides the necessity there is of contracting Debts, and entring into new Engagements to support the Vanity, which occasion them a thousand Mischiefs, and which are almost unavoidable, where People will go beyond their just Abilities and proper Qualities. It is impossible for any Woman to be a good Wife, without confidering this; 'tis a wrong Course that People take, to be always thinking on their Family, or Fortune, and forget their Husbands Quality and Estate, by which alone they are to govern themselves in these Mat-They call their Marriage, changing their Condition; they should remember, among other Senses of those Words, that they change their Condition for that of their Husband, be it what

it w

Occomuland good moderate please the 'tis

al g

th

ni

3000

.

it will, better or worse, and suit their Minds to that, and then the rest will follow as it should.

kind

ly re-

only

mity.

it Se-

e Fa-

Calould

and ifled

the the

(of-

f In-

vay,

Fanheir

to a

en-

Va-

iefs,

per be

is a

get

at-

reir

her

eir

at

11

But Thirdly, It cannot easily be, but that the Occasion of this excessive Costliness and Gaiety must be, at the bottom, Pride. It is very possible, and very frequent (I hope) for People to bear as good and humble Minds, under the richest and most costly Attire, as under the most coarse and mean; and 'tis some kind of Desence, when People go according to their State and Quality, that they are not therefore proud and haughty: But 'tis almost impossible, when People will exceed their Quality and Estates, to father such a Vanity on any thing but Pride; one can't tell where to lay it else. And this should be considered by all Women as well as Wives, since others are as

guilty of this Extravagance as they.

These are the Things that we may reasonably prefume, the Apostles intended to forbid the Christian Women: First, All Pride and Vanity, Self-conceit, and Contempt or Scorn of others. Second, All fuch Habits and Fashions as may (whether defign'd or no to do it) ferve to wanton and immodest Purposes, and prove Occafions of falling. Thirdly, All fuch Dreffing as confumes that Time that is due to God, their Neighbours, and their felves, and hinders them from carefully and foberly discharging all the Duties that they owe, in their feveral Relations, to Husbands, Children and Servants. Fourthly, All fuch Costliness of Habit as disables them from doing good in their Generations, and from exercifing fuch Acts of Charity, as they otherwise thould,

should, and, may be, would perform, but cannot, through their lavish and extravagant Expences on themselves. And, Lastly, all such Costliness of Habit, as is above their Qualities, and just and reasonable Abilities; such as appears an Affectation of greater Wealth and Honour, and Superiority, than is truly due to them. These are Things that no considering Body can suspect are not forbidden; because, with retaining these, the Women can neither be good Wives, nor good Christians. And they, who keep within these Bounds, cannot reasonably fear offending either in the Matter, or the Manner of their Dress.

I have only to remark, that the Rules of this or any other thing whatever, though never fo strictly and cautiously laid down, will be subject to Misconstruction and Mistake, (and consequently the Practice to Miscarriage) without some Care and Discretion in confidering and applying them: In every one of these Particulars beforementioned, there are some Niceties and Difficulties, that if People will not well confider Things and Circumstances, they will fall upon, and argue obstinately, and censure considently and un-There are Exceptions to be made, charitably. and some Allowances in each Particular: For, First, that may be accounted Pride and Haughtiness, which is, it may be, unhappily the natural Air and Mien of People; and that may be truly Pride in some, that is but decently affuming in And, Secondly, some heated and corrupted Hearts may make a Drefs, which is neither naturally nor designedly immodest, serve to inflame infl felv for not that the Di we for co

it the ar fo

fer

its

ri co n a

> v a t

not,

s on

s of

rea-

tion

ity,

hat

len;

nei-

Ind

ea-

the

his

fo

ect

nt-

me

ng

re-

ul-

igs

ır-

n-

e,

r,

1-

al

ly

in

r-

i-

0

C

inflame them to impure Desires, and make to themfelves Temptations of every thing. And, Thirdly, fome Dreffings on Occasions, which every one cannot know or judge of, may expend more time than others, and more than is ordinarily taken by themselves, and cause them to neglect some greater Duty for the present, which After-diligence may well repair. And, Fourthly, there may happen fome accidental Occasions that may require more coftly Habits, than is well-confiftent, for the prefent, with doing Good to others; every thing has its Season. Lastly, There may be Occasions, where it may be lawful and expedient both, to exceed themselves in Habits, and forget their Qualities and Stations, which they may afterwards as feafonably remember, and return in Soberness and Constancy again to themselves. And therefore People are not to be over-scrupulous themselves in any of these Matters, nor hasty in their censu-There are too many Things to be ring another. confidered, to determine quickly. One may with much more Ease acquit or condemn one's self, in all or any of these Particulars, because we know ourselves much better, and can frequently recover to our Memory the Principles we go upon, and know their Firmness, or their Failings. A little Understanding, with a great deal of Sincerity and good Intention, will be able to direct sufficiently and fafely in any of these Matters.

Having therefore shewn in what Sense these Words of St. Peter, consider'd with those of St. Paul, are not to be understood: And, Secondly, in what they were most probably to be taken, I

fhould

should now proceed to shew, what Ornaments the Apostles advise the Christian Women more especially to provide and look after, to recommend themselves to God, and to their Husbands. But because that Subject will take up more time, than is now left us, to speak to it, I will, for the present, add a few farther Considerations concern-

me

ble

fer

m

m

va

ing Habits, and conclude.

And, First, although these Rules are most especially directed, and relate to Women; yet are the Men also concern'd in them, and may offend against them: The Reason of the Injunctions extends to them; and if they transgress in any of these Particulars, no question but they are to blame; and fo much more than Women, by how much they account themselves the more reasonable and Superiour Creatures of the two. It is true, that St. Peter and St. Paul address their Instructions to the Women, warning them against the Weaknesfes and Failings that have all along been reckon'd properly their own, and more peculiar to their Sex: But 'tis as true, that they would have those Imperfections cur'd and taken away where-ever they appear'd; and therefore, if they mistake the Sex, they are yet right in their Design and Purpose, and undoubtedly forbid to Men, whatever is as reasonable and fit to be forbidden them, as to Women: And therefore Pride and Vanity, and Self-conceitedness, upon the score of Garb and Drefs, all vicious and loofe Defigns, all intolerable Wast of Time, all extravagant Expence, and all undecent Habit, unbefitting their Condition and Estate, are as much prohibited to Men, as Women, men, by the Scriptures, and are truly more shame-

ful and contemptible in them.

ents

ore

om-

ids.

me,

the

rn-

pe-

are

ind

ex-

efe

e; ch

nd

at

to

ef-'d

ir

fe

er

le

r-

T

is

d

d

d

Secondly, All other Women are concern'd, as well as Wives, in these Injunctions; all, that are capable of offending against Rules, are capable of observing them in greater or less degree, and are therefore so far concern'd in them: And since the main Design of the Apostles is to make the Women good Wives and good Christians, the Observance of their Rules is sure to make them good Christians, and to dispose and fit them to be good

Wives, against they come to that Estate.

'Tis a great Reproach to the Wisdom, Sobriety, and Confideration of the Men, to fee the Women reckon themselves so sure of gaining their Defigns and Ends upon them, by the Care and little Arts they use in dressing and adorning them-They fay, in effect, these wise and noble Creatures, that are fo much our Masters by design of Nature, Custom, and God's Commands, and fo superiour in Abilities of Body and Mind, are yet enfnar'd by little Fineries and Deceits, and caught by Baits as filly and fallacious, as the fimpleft Birds and Beafts, and Fishes. They fay a great deal more than this, in truth and in effect, when they put on their fine Attire, with full account of their Defign's succeeding; and Men deferve this fcornful Imposition, who look no farther than Appearances, and are govern'd by their Fancies, not their Judgment or Understanding. These kind of Frauds do commonly come home to their Artificers, and are return'd again to their Disappointment, and sometimes to their great Milery;

Mifery; for the People that are thus enfnar'd, by these poor Arts and Deceits, do oftentimes awake from their delufive Slumbers, and fall into a strange incurable Aversion to such as have so cheated them; and use them as Amnon did abufed Tamar, whose Hatred wherewith he hated her, was greater than the Love wherewith he loved her. The Remembrance of their Folly engages them in Cruelty and Injustice, by which they would revenge their grievous and vexatious Disappoint-This is intolerably wicked on the Men's part; but such Mischiefs happen too often not to be observ'd by the Women, who might learn from hence how light and inconstant that Affection is, which is kindled and increased by little Shifts and Artifices, and how foon it is extinguish'd; and into how much Sorrow and Affliction it may throw them.

It is very plain, that the Qualities which should recommend People to one another, who are to live always together, should be such as will last, and continue with them; not fuch as please them only for a little while; but fuch as will bear Deliberation before, and a fatisfactory Reflection afterwards. The Fancy is a very Weather-cock, and varies upon every Turn, and little Accident; and it is too great a Risk to run, to build the Hopes of being happy upon any thing fo uncertain. only wife way, therefore, is to make provision of fuch Qualifications, as when People are fober, and in their thinking and confidering Moods, they shall earnestly desire and value, and know are fit and necessary for their purpose; such as will not only

recom-

recor

likin

all th

mak

Qua

ing t

Hait

deve

pear

Qua

neit

goo

fcri

me

pec

co

alo

an

up

gr

ar

cl

recommend them, at first, to Favour and Goodliking, but such as will also keep them in esteem all their Lives long: This is the likeliest way to make their Condition happy. Now these good Qualifications are not the beautifying and adorning themselves with Gold and Pearls, and plaited Hair, the dressing loosely and immodestly, the devoting a world of Time, and most of their Estate, to the setting themselves out, to all appearance, much above their Fortune and their Qualities. These Things will commend them to neither good, nor wise, or sober People; but such good Qualities and Virtues as the Scriptures describe and injoin to them, and which will recommend them to the Favour both of God and Man.

(e

lo

1-

1,

r.

n

d

S

Thirdly and lastly; There is something in Habit peculiarly decent, proper and becoming to every Age, as well as Quality, which ought to be observ'd. The Customs of all wife and civiliz'd Nations, in conformity to Nature and good Reason, have all along made difference betwixt the Habits of old and young People, and fet a Mark of Lightness upon fuch as would not feem to know when they grewold, though all the World about them knew and faw it. This Humour is not, of itself, to be charged as finful, but wonderfully vain and weak; against the Rules of Reason, which injoin to all People, as far as can confift with their Conveniency, whatever Things are honest, lovely, and of good report. It argues a Mind intent, and fix'd too fast upon the little inconsiderable Trifles of this World, and too, too little thoughtful of the great momentous Matters of the other: The older Peo-

ple grow, they more they see the Emptiness and Vanity of all the Things they heretofore delighted in; and they refuse them now, although they us'd them innocently then: Age and Experience have convinc'd them, that fuch Things are not Entertainments for confidering Minds: They are glad to excuse those vain Amusements past, with the Giddiness and Thoughtlessness of Youth, the Customs of the Times, and Conversation of the Neighbourhood. But now, another Age requires another Way of Living: It is time to look a little forward, and think of putting off the Body itself; but before that, all the Mind's corrupt and vain Affections, all its Follies, Weaknesses and Failings, amongst which, certainly, the careful and sollicitous Concern for Habit and Attire may well be reckoned: And therefore, for People, well stricken in Years, to mind these filly Matters, is to forget the Rules of Decency, and to neglect the Warning God and Nature give them: And, lastly, to afford some little ground to Suspicion, that they want those true and real Ornaments and Beauties, which adorn the Souls, and render most agreeable the Conversation of good Women, such as the Apostles, we shall see, describe and recommend in the following Discourse.

DIS-

w

n G

of (

folli

mat

wha

Chi

let i

15 71

qui

pric

the

by

He

tio

the

an ru va co

R

DISCOURSE X.

and

ted is'd

ave

in-

to

id-

ms gh-

10tle

lf;

lin

il-

ol-

be

en

et

n-

to

y

S,

e

e

n

I PETER III. VERSE 4.

But let it be the hidden Man of the Heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the Ornament of a meek and quiet Spirit, which is in the fight of God of great price.

Having spoken at large to the negative Advice of St. Peter and St. Paul, what sort of Ornaments they would not have the Women sollicitous about; I am now come to their affirmative and positive Injunctions, which shew with what kind of Ornaments they are desirous all Christian Women should adorn themselves: But let it be the hidden Man of the Heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the Ornament of a meek and quiet Spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price: In speaking to which, I will, first, consider the Terms here us'd, and then the Things intended by them.

By the hidden Man of the Heart, is meant, the Heart which is hidden in a Man. There is mention made in the Scriptures of the Old Man, and the New, or renewed Man, and of the New Greature: By which are understood the State of Nature, and the State of Grace; a State of Sin and Corruption, and a State of Regeneration, or Renovation of Life, entered upon by Baptism, and continued in, by leading a Virtuous, Godly and Religious Life, according to the Laws and Commands of Christ; so that all baptiz'd Christians,

living

living honestly and well, have put off the Old Man, and are become New Creatures, renewed and regenerated by the Holy Spirit: And may therefore know their Condition and its Security, although they may not understand the Meaning of the Terms, Old and New Man, Regeneration or Renovation. A Man is also divided into the outward and inward Man, in the Scriptures; which may also be taken sometimes for the Old and the New Man; but more generally for the Body and the Mind; for that which outwardly appears, and for that which is fecret and undiscovered; for that which is open and feen, and that which is hidden; for Actions and Affections, for Practices and Principles; the first being attributed to the Body, the latter to the Mind: And therefore the hidden Man of the Heart, is the Heart of every one that lies hidden: And this it is the Apostles would have beautified and adorn'd; they would have the Minds of Christian Women fill'd with good Principles; their Hearts should be stor'd with fuch good Qualities and Virtues, as are truly their Grace and Ornament, and cause them to appear as lovely and defirable, as all exteriour Garb and Drefs can make their Bodies; and this adorning is to be in that which is not corruptible: Gold and Pearls, and costly rich Apparel, are all of them perishable Things; Things that corrupt, consume, and wear away in time; Things that are eaten up with Rust, and Moth, subject to Thieves, and many Accidents: The Things that ferve the Body, either for Use or Ornament, are, like the Body, corruptible and wasting: But the Mind,

looks Amor and a deft (quiet tion: lued mend Apol trice . highl it app is thi men their tues plish great ter: cular is to T Part. is to mak the s

enjo

equa

cult

letti

cult

grea

Mind

Man,

l re-

fore

ugh

the

eno-

pard

nay

New

the

and

for

is is

ces

the

the

ery

les

ıld

ith

r'd

ıly

to

ur

nis

e :

all

ot,

at

to

at

e,

le

1,

his

Mind, immaterial and immortal, requires and looks for Ornaments fuited and proper to it. Amongst which, one considerable one is a meek and quiet, good and gentle Temper; a lowly modest Opinion of themselves, together with a filent, quiet and contented Mind under their Condition: And because those Ornaments are most vahed that are most costly; therefore, to recommend this meek and quiet Spirit the more, the Apostle adds, that it is in the sight of God of great price; i.e. commanded and approved, and valued highly by him. From the Terms thus explain'd, it appears that the Thing the Apostle would say, is this; that the readiest way for Christian Women to recommend themselves to God, and to their Husbands, is to flock themselves with Virmes and good Qualities, with inward Accomplishments, such as are lasting, and will be of greatest Use and Service both here, and hereafter: This will appear from confidering the Particulars injoin'd. First, the hidden Man of the Heart is to be adorn'd, i. e. the Mind.

The Mind, or Soul, is certainly the superiour Part, and better half of Man, as being that which is to guide and govern the other, and that which makes him a reasonable and religious Creature, the greatest Privilege and Honour he is capable of enjoying; and therefore certainly it deserves to be equally taken care of with the Body, and to be cultivated and improv'd. To be sollicitous for setting out the Body to advantage, and neglect the cultivating the Mind, is as if a Man should be at great Expence to build the Walls and Outside of

his House exceeding fine and stately, and shew no manner of Contrivance in the Infide of it; regarding neither Beauty nor Convenience, nor intending any Furniture: This would be building for the Sight and Pleasure of People passing by, and wanting in the mean time an Habitation for himself. No doubt but every one would blame fuch a Man for neglecting that which is most properly the House, and ought to be most serviceable and convenient, for the fake of appearing well to Strangers, without any farther use. They are no wifer, nor less to be condemn'd, who spend their Time and Pains to appear externally fine and handsome, while the Mind within is suffered to lie wast, and wild, and unimprov'd. This is, indeed, to be wanting to their own Design and Aim, which is to make at least a good Shew; for the Mind is the Principle of that Life and Motion, which is to give true Grace and Ornament to all their Actions: So that however well the Body may be framed by Nature, however fine and handsome it appear; yet if the Mind be weak or filly, the first Motion shews it; they can no sooner speak or stir, but they discover their Desects: They are like fine Statues, whilft they stand motionless and filent; but when they shew they are alive, by Speech and Motion, they turn to aukward and irregular Figures, and lofe their Comeliness immediately. This shews from whence the Beauty and the Grace of all exteriour Gesture and Action proceeds, even from the Mind; which, being in its felf accomplish'd inwardly, does govern and direct the outward Carriage and Bela-VIOUI who upor wou and fiver Hea hide The in Car Mo Life

this tail by too con

ers to ca

> pr kr to

th no

V

1 shew

it; re-

nor in-

ilding

ng by,

on for

blame

It pro-

ceable

vellto

are no

their

hand-

to lie

, in-

Aim,

r the

tion,

to all

may

land-

k or

oner

ets:

mo-

are

luk-

me-

the

ture

ich,

go-

111-

TIJO

viour of the Body, so as to make it handsome and becoming; so that, on this account, they who desire Favour, Acceptance, and Goodwill upon the score of Beauty, and a good Appearance, would never find their Labour lost, in adorning and improving of their Minds; it will both answer that, and a great many better Ends. The Heart or Mind of Man is, of it self, invisible and hidden, but so is God himself, and yet acts all: There is nothing discovers it self more, or sooner, in almost every Look and Gesture; so that no Care or Pains can be too great about this first Mover, this mighty Spring, that communicates Life and Motion to all the rest.

Now the Mind (and here I speak of Men as well as Women) is to be improv'd by reading, thinking, and confidering: People come to obtain good Qualities of the Mind, as they come by feveral Habits of the Body, by Use and Custom, and taking the proper Courses; so they come to Virtue and Religion, Wisdom and Difcretion. They find that they are born with Powers and Faculties, different from, and superiour to those of other Creatures; they find that they can call to mind Things past, can consider Things present, and compare them one with another, and know their difference, and can determine what to do in time to come; they can inquire into their own Original, and find their Species has not been from all Eternity, but was in time created by a Being, existing necessarily it self, and voluntarily producing all Things elfe: They find this powerful Being has created them with fo many Wants,

Wants, that they must needs depend upon him for Supply, which brings them, by Necessity, to worship him by Prayer; and yet hath crown'd them with fo many Bleffings and good Things, that natural Gratitude excites them to return him Praise and Thanksgiving: By which they unavoidably become Religious Creatures: They evidently see that God hath made them and design'd them to be fo, by giving them Abilities and Powers of worshipping and serving him by Prayer and Praise, which are denied to all the Creatures of the World but them: For, finding it exceedingly just and reasonable, that a Being so beneficent and good, as to make them what they are, and to give them what they have, and moreover fo powerful as to supply them with what they ask and want; that fuch a Being should be worshipped, honour'd and rever'd; and finding that no part of the Creation is capable, besides Mankind, of paying him this Worship and Religious Honour and Service, they cannot help concluding, that it lies on them to do it, and that it is one, and a mighty End of their Creation.

Thus, by a little easy thinking and considering, the Mind is fill'd with the Knowledge and Belief of God, the good and powerful Author and Creator of it, and all Things else; and fully convinc'd of the Necessity of worshipping and serveing him, and that every Man and Woman in the World is design'd, by God, to be a Reasonable, and therefore a Religious Creature. This is

the first Improvement of the Mind:

The

Th

ercife

ver W

datio

Whe

ador

nal,

Holy

ture

And

moi

we

fect

lov

are

De

the

ou

Fa

of

W

lil

C

2

u

I

n him

ty, to

wn'd

hings,

n him

v un-

y evi-

ign'd

ow.

and

es of

ngly

cent

and

r fo

ask

ip-

no

ıd,

0-

g,

e,

The next Improvement of it, is, to the Exercife of Virtue. Without Religion, People never will be Virtuous; but when that good Foundation is once laid, the other follows eafily. When we confider God in all his Excellencies and adorable Perfections, we find him in himself Eternal, and Almighty, and All-wife, and Pure and Holy; and, with respect to Us, and all his Creatures, Just and Righteous, Merciful and Good: And finding these to be the Persections of the most perfect Being, we conclude, that the nearer we approach to these Perfections, the more perfect Creatures we our felves are, and the more lov'd and valued by this perfect Being. These are the two Bottoms, upon which the reasonable Defire of being Virtuous is originally founded, the Defire of being as excellent and perfect as our Nature is capable of, and our Abilities and Faculties are fitted to make us; and the Desire of rendring our felves most acceptable to God, who is the Rewarder of fuch as endeavour to be like him, and to please him. Upon these accounts, we are excited to be pure and holy, chaft and clean, and to preserve our selves spotless and undefiled; because we know this Sanctity and Innocence is greatly perfective of our Nature, keeps us in the Rank and Order God hath placed us; whereas Pollution and Impurity degrade and fink us below our felves, and fet us on the Iquare with Beafts that have no Understanding; and because we know this Virtue is altogether Heavenly, and of sweetest Odour before God, and will be recompene'd by him, with the most

0 4

pure, fincere and undisturb'd Pleasures in Heaven, the Seat of Holiness it self. Upon these accounts, we are excited to be just and righte, ous to one another in all our Dealings; because we know it is so excellent and reasonable in it self, and so becoming us, and necessary for us; that when we depart from it, we do, in a manner, disclaim all farther Conversation with Mankind, not being willing to be govern'd by that everlasting Rule of Righteousness, of doing by others, as we would think reasonable, in the like Case, to be dealt withal our selves; but setting up our private Will and Humour in its stead, and studying our Conveniency and Pleasure only.

There is nothing more Natural, than that every one should confult his own Ease and Benefit in the first Place: But because that which belongs to every one, is really no Priviledge to any one; therefore every one must depart from his natural Right in some Cases, and submit to Rules that are unexceptionable, and impartial, and favour all the World alike; amongst which, none is like that Rule of Reason and Religion above-mention'd, of dealing with others, as we would think it just we should be dealt withal our felves. There is no Body can escape seeing the Reasonableness of this Rule, and the Necessity of observing it, to the Security both of our Being, and of all we have; and the closer we keep to it, the better and more perfect we are in our felves, and the more useful to others; it gives us Pre-eminence and Superiority above all that neglect or

over-

overlo

with

are e

wife,

from

of b

tatio

that Senf

ing

by F

he i

him

ous.

nou

Inju

cot

nat

kir

tai

Pe

ha

ti

th

ri

overlook it: And farthermore, it gives us Favour with God; we refemble him very much, and are exceedingly approv'd of by him, in being just and righteous. He cannot indeed be otherwife, there being nothing to fway or move him from his Eternal Rectitude; but we are capable of being biass'd and corrupted by the Temptations both of Pleasure and Advantage; and that is the Foundation of our Merit (in its fober Sense); from thence arises our Ability of exerciseing Virtue, and the Opportunity of pleafing God, by preferring the being perfect in our Nature, as he intended us, and choosing rather to refemble him in his adorable Attribute of Just and Righteous, than to be pleas'd or profited, to his Dishonour, to our own Shame and Infamy, and to the Injury and Detriment of another: Upon these accounts it is, we are also excited to be compassionate and good; the shewing Pity, and the being kind to fuch as stand in need of our Assistance, is without doubt an Excellence, and great Perfection of our Nature. To pardon fuch as have offended us, and fuch as are not only liable to our Displeasure, but to our Punishment; to satisfy the hungry and the thirsty Souls, to cloath the Naked, visit the Sick and Prisoners, to comfort the Diffress'd, to shelter the Weak and Innocent from the Power of infolent and great Men; to right the Injur'd and Oppress'd; in a word, to do good, in any kind, by Money, Counfel, and Affiftance, by Favour or Authority, does naturally give Men an uncontroul'd, indisputable Power and Superiority: The Benefactor will be always

Heahese hteause

in it
us;
nanan-

hat by the

etnd,

ee-

ta m o

ולי

always uppermost, in the Praise, and Honour and Esteem of all that see and know, as well as of fuch as feel his Goodness: And hereto are we alfo mov'd, by confidering, that, by doing good, and shewing Mercy, we refemble most our Heavenly Father, the Author and Giver of all good Things; and who bestows his Favours and his Bleffings upon Men, with this Defign, that they should also favour and do good to one another, and be themselves a Bleffing to their Generation: And hath also promis'd, in a thousand Places, to recompence most amply such as prefer the being like to him, and doing all the good they can, to any little private Interest and Advantage of their own. There is, I think, no Question to be made, but that the Defire of being excellent and perfect, as we are capable of being, and the Desire of rendring our felves acceptable with God, and being favour'd by him here, and recompenc'd by him hereafter, are the Bottom and Foundation, upon which are built both the Defire, and Aim of being Virtuous; which was the fecond Thing to which the Mind was to attend, and be improv'd.

The third Improvement is, to Wisdom and Discretion; by which I understand, not only the Knowledge and Dexterity of being Religious, and exercising Virtue, with Advantage; but also an Ability of behaving themselves prudently and decently, on all Occasions, towards all People. It is possible to be both Religious and Virtuous, without Discretion; but neither Virtue nor Religion are credited or promoted by such People: They are good themselves; but their Good is

not

not

trav

of t

Wa

inv

fior

Off

Fo

lig

fec

Vo

Go

fel

VO

in

fo

lo

m

fe

d

and s of alod, leaboc his hey ner, on: to ing to leir de, erfire nd by on, of to d. nd he 15, fo nd e. ıs,

e-

is ot

not at all edifying, but rather hurtful: The Extravagance of their Zeal, the indifcreet Managery of their Devotion, the Indecency of their unufual Way and Gesture, are so far from promoting and inviting to Religion, that they rather give occafion of Pity to wife and good People, occasion of Offence and Trouble to weak and little-confidering Folks, and occasion of Scorn and Mockage to light and profane one's; whereas a fober, unaffected, grave and discreet Deportment, both of Voice and Gesture in the publick Worship of God, is not only handsome and becoming in it felf, but does infenfibly and unaccountably provoke the Zeal of others to Imitation, and excites in them religious and devout Thoughts. And fo it is with the Exercise of many Virtues, which lofe much of their Power and Efficacy, for want of prudent and discreet Conduct. Thus one may lofe some part of Respect to Justice, by feeing a Criminal treated inhumanly by either Judge or Council, or elfe by feeing him condenin'd with unseasonable Sarcasm, and in a vein of Lightness; and yet he shall deserve his Sentence, and be justly punish'd: But yet this Justice, thus administred, shall not have so good Effects upon the Minds of Spectators, as it would, if they discern'd such Gravity, such Calmness and becoming Evenness of Temper, as would shew neither Displeasure at the Offender's Person, nor Unconcernedness at his Offence; but a due Mixture of Zeal for the Security of Laws and Government, and of Humanity and Pity for the Miserable; for that is the Work and Business

of Discretion, to attain one's End, by Means not only just and righteous in themselves, but also well approv'd of, and best lik'd by others; to do what should, and must be done, but in the most becoming and most acceptable Manner.

yet

cali

ter

is it

> it th

> > It

to

Thus Clemency and Lenity may be so indiscreetly exercis'd to some Delinquents, with respect to the Manner, and so unseasonably, with respect to Time and Opportunity, that it shall rather seem a Disregard to Justice, and an Encouragement to Villany, than an Effect of Mercy and Compassion: And though Nature strongly inclines to Pity, and the Heart of Man yields easily to Acts of Mercy; yet when it is unseasonably and improperly shewn, it misses its Effect upon Men's Minds, and is neither approv'd nor

prais'd.

It is fo, I think, with every thing befides of Moment; where Prudence and Discretion do not fway and manage, the best of Virtues lose their Power and Efficacy: i. e. there is no Comparison betwixt the Good they do under a weak imprudent Management, and what they would do, if wifely and discreetly ordered: And if Discretion gives fo great Advantage to Religion and Virtue, which are able of themselves to bear themselves out, it must be altogether necessary, in other Matters of less moment, to make them pass tolerably. The Truth of it is, without Discretion, neither Man nor Woman are conversible with, nor can they do any thing acceptably; it is that which gives Grace and Ornament to all they fay and do, nor is it to be neglected in the smallest matters.

It is hard to tell how it is to be acquir'd; but vet the want of it is fensibly discern'd on all Occasions, and appears in all the Follies and Absurdities that People commit. It is, as I faid, a Dexterity and Ability of behaving one's felf prudently and decently to all People on all Occasions; and it is fo very useful and becoming every Body, that it ought to be studied much more carefully, than it usually is; since every Body is the better for it themselves, and the more serviceable to others. It may be, Solomon intended to describe it in part, when he tells us, Eccles. 3. 1. that there is, to every thing, a Season, and a Time to every purpose under Heaven, a Time to break down, a Time to build up; a Time to weep, and a Time to laugh; a Time to get, and a Time to lose; a Time to keep, and a Time to cast away; a Time to keep silence, and a Time to speak: That is, there is a Season and Time fo proper and convenient for all Purpofes, that they, who observe it not, will infallibly fall into great Abfurdities, and commit a world of Errors and Indecencies; and they, who do observe these proper Times, shall shew themselves wife and confiderate People, effect their Purpoles much better, and live in more Esteem: Regard to Time, is undoubtedly a huge and necessary part of Discretion; but to that must also be joyned a due Regard to the Age, and Place, Person, and Quality of those we have to deal withal: The more general and extensive our Consideration and Observation of these Things are, the likelier is our Conduct to be prudent and difcreet, the less Offences and Absurdities we shall commit,

eans but

ers; t in ner.

difreith

all ourcy

lds

n-

or of

ir n

if n

5

commit, the more becoming and more useful will our Conversation and Behaviour be. And I insift the more on this, because 'tis probable, that more domestick Evils and Uneasinesses, that trouble Families, arise from want of Discretion, than want of either Virtue or Religion: And therefore when I was shewing how the hidden Man of the Heart was to be adorn'd; i.e. how the Mind was to be cultivated and improv'd; Imade no doubt of adding Wisdom and Discretion to Virtue and Religion, as things necessary. For fince the Apostle's Purpose is, that Christian Women should be good Wives, as well as virtuous and religious, and that it is their Duty to be one as well as the other, it must needs be convenient to urge the providing fuch Qualities, as are necessary to the discharging that Duty, next to Virtue and Religion: And fince, without a competent Share of Prudence and Difcretion, it is not possible to be either good Wives, or good Mothers, or good Mistresses of Families, it is to be no little part of their Concern to get as much of Prudence and Discretion as they can.

The next part of the Description of this Ornament of the Mind, is, That it is to be in that which is not corruptible. Whatever we can possibly adorn the Body with, is corruptible, and wears away with Time; and all the Beauty, and the Comeliness it gives, is short and perishing: Sometimes it happens, that these costly Ornaments, and gay Attire are fo far from adding any Grace or Beauty to the Parties, that they are rather to their Difadvantage, and expose them to Derision, and deceive none but themselves: But granting they

obtain

they ' Delui pleas' fore I Imag Haza the f hard fanta cann that fure ty; it le as h are the and

obtair

and the En

the tue tai

Fo

W

vill

fift

ore

Fa-

int

en

art

be

d-

li-

e's

od

at

it

ıg

g

e,

s,

obtain their End, and render them as lovely as they would appear, how long does fuch a vain Delufion last, and what is the use of being so pleas'd? How may hundred Accidents, how many fore Diseases, quite destroy this Creature of the Imagination in a little time? And if it scape these Hazards, how strangely do a few Years disguise the fairest Face, so that an absent Friend shall hardly know it when he comes again? Sure for fantaftick, useless, and so perishing a thing as this, cannot be worth the Care, and Pains, and Cost, that People are at about it; the Praise and Pleafure of it, whilft it lasts, is inconsiderable and empty; and when 'tis gone (as it is quickly gone) it leaves either Shame or Grief, or both, to fuch as have over-rated it whilft they had it, and vahed themselves upon that weak account: They are punished in some proportion to the vain Esteem they held themselves in.

But now, the Mind, when that is cultivated and improv'd, answers sufficiently for all the Care, and Time, and Pains, that are bestow'd upon it; the Ornaments of that, are such as answer to their End; they represent it always beautiful and lovely, and to all People. It does not depend upon the Humour or the Fancy, whether Religion, Virtue and Discretion, shall find Favour and Acceptance; for they will always find it, and their Force is irresistible: Whilst Men have Reason and Understanding, they cannot help approving and desiring those Accomplishments of the Soul; nay, we may trust them with their Passions also in this case; for the 'their own Practice be against them, (guided

(guided by their inordinate Defires) yet is their fecret Judgment always on the fide of Religion, Virtue, and Discretion; and they always like them in others, how much foever they negled them in themselves: The loosest People in the World would have their Mothers and their Wives, their Daughters and their Sifters, and all their Relations, religious, virtuous and discreet, rather than beautiful; those whom they love the best, they would have best provided; and therefore 'tis the fettled Judgment of Mankind, that these are the best, the truest, and most lasting Ornaments of Women. 'Tis true, that when Beauty also meets, and joins with these good Qualities, they give a mutual Lustre to each other, and set each other off, to great advantage: This adds a Grace and Comeliness to them, and they tresent the greatest Beauty yet more beautiful; but these are Ornaments when that is gone, and where it never was; these are incorruptible, and last as long as the Mind itself, which they adorn and beautify. These are of great Use and Service; these deferve the greatest Praise and Honour, and these will stand them in stead, when all things else are gone and fail them. All Beauty, and external Ornaments are of very little Use and Service, either to fuch as have them, or fuch as only look on: Whereas Religion, Virtue, and Discretion are of general Use and Benefit; they are serviceable to every one; they do not only make those, who possess them, good; but they make them do good to all that are concern'd, or have to deal with them. Beauty and Wit, and Birth and Quality,

ration ration alway tion: Sight Eyes, gives the li mirat ture ; gets ly, a every pears the I men are t no c Efte give and

and

Fav

Bea

Lor

thei

it is

ftov

but

tue

este

lity, a

their lity, and fine Attire attract the Eyes and Admiigion, ration of People: But 'tis another fort of Admilike ration that is rais'd by Virtue and Religion; 'tis glea always attended with Esteem, and secret Veneran the tion: The one is the transient Wonder of a fine Sight, fomething that glifters, and dazzles the Eyes, and works a little on the Fancy, and then gives way to other Novelties, that still occasion the like Wonder. The other is the standing Admiration of some great and noble Work of Nature; which, by its Beauty, and its Usefulness, begets Esteem and Liking in the Mind immediately, and which continue there, and are excited every time the Object, or Idea of it, rifes or appears. There is therefore no comparison betwixt the Usefulness of Beauty, and the Bodies Ornaments, and those good Qualities and Graces that are the Ornaments and Beauties of the Soul; and no comparison betwixt the Praises, Honour and

their

id all

reet,

e the

lere.

that

Or-

auty

ties,

l fet

dsa

Sent

bele

e it

ong

alla

iefe

refe

are

nal

ce,

ok

on

ce-

fe,

do

eal

11-V,

Esteem, that all good, wife, and sober People give and have for virtuous and religious Women, and that short Gaze and Compliment, that vain and idle Spirits pay to Beauty and fine Habits. Favour, faith one that knew, is deceitful, and Beauty is vain; but a Woman that feareth the Lord, she shall be prais'd. Favour and Beauty have their Praise, vain and deceitful as they are; but it is also vain, and commonly deceitful; i.e. beflowed with purpose of enfnaring and corrupting; but they, who fear the Lord in Wisdom and Virtue, are prais'd in earnest, and honour'd and esteem'd with all Sincerity.

The

The Choice then of these different Ornaments and Beauties is not difficult; the one are useless, the other good and serviceable; the one are lov'd, and had in Veneration and Esteem by all good People, the other valued, for a time, by young and

giddy Fancies.

But, lastly, and especially, these Ornaments and Beauties of the Mind will stand them in good flead, when every thing besides will fail them, and be gone. The Favour and Affection, which are only built upon good Features, Colour, Shape, or Drefs and Ornament, must necessarily fall to the Ground, when these decay and die; and therefore this Affection depends upon Diseases, Accidents and Humour, for its Life and Being: Now this is not fufficient to fecure the Peace and Happiness of married Women; for, not having it in their Power to secure themselves against Diseases, Accidents, and change of Humour, the Affection, that is to make and keep them happy, is exceeding precarious, and dependent, and uncertain: And therefore, fince it is fure and certain, that they shall stand in need of such Affection and Good-will, as is to keep them easy and contented all their Lives long, and longer much than they can hold their Beauty and their Comeliness; they are oblig'd, in common Prudence, to secure the Affection of their Husbands, by adorning themfelves with fuch good Qualities, as will render them for ever acceptable to wife and lober Men, even when the Ruins of their Beauty are defac'd; and those are Godliness, and Virtue, and Discretion: Where these appear, there will be be li be, th difce ligion them prop and . with charg ther, genc tainr to th com will and i knov give And for w

and i misp profit yet I ter I cloat shall

nake Thro

And

ents

lefs,

ov'd,

Peo-

and

and

boog

iem,

hich

ape,

1 to

ere-

Acci-

Now

Hap-

it in

afes,

tion,

eed-

ain:

that

and

nted

they

they

the

em-

ren-

ber

are

tue,

will

be

Stant

be little want of any thing besides; or if there be, these will excuse it, or supply it: Where Men discern the Fear of God, and a good Sense of Religion prevailing in their Minds, and influencing them to the Exercise of all the Virtues that are proper to them, according to their Opportunities and Abilities; and fee them manage their Affairs with Care and Wisdom, and Discretion, and discharge the Duties of every Relation, whether Mother, Wife, or Mistress of a Family, with Diligence and Prudence; they will despise the Entertainments of a light and idle Fancy, with respect to these most solid, useful, and most lasting Accomplishments of Mind: Such Qualities as these will give them Grace and Comeliness throughout, and render them most lovely in the Eyes of all that know them; and (which is infinitely more) will give them Grace and Favour in the Sight of God. And this is that which they must principally mind; for what would it avail them to be amiable to all the World, if under God's Displeasure?

The time will come, shortly perhaps to some, and not long hence to most, when they, who have mispent their Life in these, or other idle and unprositable Exercises, though not directly sinful, yet have thereby neglected to improve their better Part, to dress up, and adorn their Souls, and cloath themselves with Virtues and good Works, shall see the Folly of their Choice, and find how maked and defenceless they shall stand before the Throne of God, when they must give account how they have past their Lives in this World. And they, who have been holy and religious, con-

P 2

stant and fervent in their Prayers and Praises, frequent in reading of the Scriptures and good Books, and meditating on the Promifes and Threats they find therein; and who have all along been careful to be rich in good Works, busied in the Exercife of Virtue, and constantly doing the several Duties of their Life; shall find the Advantage also of having thus improv'd their Time, their Talents and Abilities; for they shall see that this was trimming of their Lamps, and living in a Readiness and Expectation of the Bridegroom's calling them: This was the adorning of the hidden Man of the Heart, in that which was not corruptible; and this, they shall soon find, is in the fight of God of great price. What is also to be understood by the Ornament of a meek and quiet Spirit, here particularly nam'd, will deferve to be confder'd by itself, in the following Discourse.

DISCOURSE XI.

I PETER III. VERSE 4.

But let it be the hidden Man of the Heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the Ornament of a meek and quiet Spirit, which is in the fight of God of great price.

ST. Peter having told the Women, in general, what kind of Ornaments would best become them, the adorning the hidden Man of the Heart, in that which is not corruptible; i.e. the improving of their Minds in Religion, Virtue and Discretion, which

whi of C whe con mee figh

in t and orne wh Fir

By star and Fie

Di Ha ke to

ble or m

fee on th

th or w

O

aj

as

, freooks, they careveral ntage their t this in a om's hidrrupfight iderpirit, onsiof a lit of ral, nne art, ing

on, ich

which will recommend them to the Favour both of God, and wife and good Men, and will laft when all other Ornaments corrupt and perish; he comes to one particular Ornament, even that of a meek and quiet Spirit, which, he tells them, is in the fight of God of great price. We have therefore, in the First place, to see what is meant by a meek and quiet Spirit: And, Secondly, to shew, how ornamental and becoming it is: And, Thirdly, upon what account it is in the fight of God a great price. First, What is meant by a meek and quiet Spirit. By these Words we easily and naturally understand a foft and gentle Temper, a peaceful, calm, and patient Mind, oppos'd to Anger, Pride and Fierceness, Noisiness, Impatience, and a restless Discontent. This kind of Temper is the greatest Happiness that can befal any one: It is that which keeps them easy themselves, and makes them so to all the World about them. Most of the Troubles and Misfortunes that befal Men, are more or less uneasy and afflicting, as their Minds are more or less prepar'd to entertain them; so we fee the fame Evil, that oppresses and overwhelms one Man, makes very little Impression upon ano-One Man grows loud and paffionate upon the least Occasion; a Look of Slight, a doubtful or an angry Word fets him on fire immediately; whilst another bears the most apparent Insults, and heaviest Injuries, with great Evenness and Patience. One Man is calm and eafy under great Losses, whilst another storms and rages under little Dilappointments: So that a meek and quiet Spirit does most eyidently give the Advantage to such

as have it, and delivers them from many Sufferings to which the fierce and angry, hafty and impatient People are subject; and is therefore, in itself, the most desirable Temper that can be, in a Life, that is the Scene of so much certain Misery and Trouble.

But fince the good Qualities we are exhorted to possess ourselves of, and the Things we are commanded to do, must needs be in our Power to get and do; and that a gentle Temper, a meek and quiet Spirit, are not Things that we can make or get of ourselves, but such as God gives us, and we bring into the World with us, how can a Man or Woman be exhorted to adorn themselves with a meek and quiet Spirit? It is what every one defires, and every one would have, if he could get In answer to this, it must be acknowledg'd, that the Seeds and Principles of all our Passions and Humours are born into the World with us; and that there is generally a Predominancy of some one Humour, that from our Infancy bears fway above the rest, and shews itself conspicuously, and which peculiarly marks out, and denominates a Man so temper'd: And 'tis sure, this mechanical Propensity of Nature is not by any Care or Pains, by any Art or Diligence, to be extinguish'd quite, or altogether chang'd in Education: There will be evermore a Tendency and Biass to that side, as all Men feel. But 'tis as fure, that Care, and Pains, and Art, and Diligence, and Time, and Use, and Custom, and good Consideration will go a very great way to the changing and correcting any Temper whatfoever; and Use, we say, (with (with we fer almost fore, to class as had as far ado that put the Occ

Li

T the Si H

t

Suffer-

nd im-

in it-

, in a

1ifery

orted

e are

OWer

neek

nake

and

Man

with

de-

get

g'd,

ions

us;

me

vay

and

s a

cal

ns,

te,

ill

le,

nd

nd

ill

1-

y,

h

(with Reason enough) is a second Nature; and we see that People, by habituating themselves, do almost become any thing they will. And therefore, though People have it not in their Power to change their Tempers altogether, yet they always have it in their Power to change them as far as God requires them to do it, i.e. as far as he enables them by Reason, and Use, to change them, and that is, certainly, to prevent all mischievous and evil Effects that flow from them: Thus St. Peter exhorts the Women to adorn themselves with a meek and quiet Spirit; that is, not to put off their natural Temper, and put on a new one presently, but so to govern themselves, as to be meek and quiet upon all Occasions; that, by Reason, and Consideration, they restrain themselves from falling into Bitternels, Impatience, Mutiny, and Clamour.

It cannot be, but that, in the course of their Lives, and the Management of their domestick Concerns, a great many cross perverse Accidents must happen, and they must meet with many Disappointments, many Provocations, and severe Trials; and if they do not arm themselves against them, with a patient and a prudent Spirit, their Sufferings will be almost doubled on their Heads. Now they are not called upon, to be insensible and stupid under what befalls them; but so to prepare and behave themselves, that they may do nothing that misbecomes them: Herein they are to exercise their Reason and best Abilities: These are the Proofs of their Obe-

dience, Patience, and Discretion,

P 4

It

It would be of use to them, to consider with themselves, that Matters are seldom mended with them by all the Noise and Contention that is rais'd; they are oft-times made worse, but very feldom better; neither the Folly nor Perverleness of Men are cur'd, nor any mischievous unlucky Accidents remedied, by Fury and Impa. tience: But the Things, which, of themselves, would have done but little hurt, do, by an indiscreet and hasty Management, become the occasions of great Mischief: Sometimes, even for a fmall and inconfiderable matter, they fall into fuch excess of Anger and Disorder, that they thereby hazard all the Peace and Quiet of their Lives, even the Affection of their Husbands, of which they ought to be most tender, knowing their Happiness must end, when that is alienated and lost from them. There are few People in the World that are upon the square, and independent one upon another, that can compare the Provocations and Occasions of their Anger and Contention, with the Events and Confequences, with any tolerable Rest and Satisfaction, they find them so unequal and unreasonable, as well as mischievous; and much less comfortably can People, so near related, reflect on their Contentions with their Partners and Superiours, to whom they owe Silence at least, and some Submission. But generally, the Event declares that nothing could be more their Wisdom and their Interest, than a meek and quiet Spirit: It would be better much, if they would let their Reason and Consideration teach them beforehand,

(as it terwa by fur for; loft,

W horta 9000 quie with old ' ador Hus him eno wil Hu and ac an C In V

217

(as it might) what the Event will shew them afterwards, too late; for the Learning People get by such Experiences, is commonly too dearly paid for; for they only find, that they have weakly

loft, what they can hardly again recover.

r with

ended

on that out ve-

verfe.

us un-

Impa.

elves,

an in-

ie oc-

for a

into they

their

s, of

Ving

ated

le in

1de-

pare

ger nfe-

on,

as

ort-

eir

irs,

ne

res

It

ir

15

When St. Peter has done with his general Exhortation to the Wives, to adorn themselves with good Qualities, and in particular with a meek and quiet Spirit; he afterwards enforces his Advice, with telling them, that after this manner, in the old Time, the Holy Women, who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in Subjection to their own Husbands: Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him Lord. From whence we may reasonably enough conclude, that a meek and quiet Spirit will eafily infer, the being in Subjection to their Husbands, the obeying them in things reasonable, and the using civil and respectful Terms to them, as Sarah, their great Example, us'd to Abraham. And Sarah indeed had occasion, upon several accounts, to exercise a great deal of Patience and Submission; she was to leave her native Country, and Relations, and follow her Hufband to a strange Land: It did not appear his Interest, and, by a disputatious and complaining Woman, might eafily have been adjudg'd an unreasonable Humour, and unaccountable Extravagance, and not to be complied with, to leave a place where they were easy, settled, and in great Prosperity, to go they knew not whither, upon pretence of I know not what divine Appearance, Dream, or Vision, for she had only Abraham's Word to warrant it, When People

are not dispos'd to such Submission, as becomes them, to the Will of their Superiours, they are full of Scruples and Objections, and making Arguments of every thing; whilst they, who understand, and are resolv'd to do their Duty, obey without Dispute, and comply with Calmness and great Readiness, even under Doubt, Suspicion, and

Uncertainty of what will follow.

There may be many Cases, where a nice and curious Search after Causes and Reasons for such and fuch Proceedings, may not be half fo useful, commendable and convenient, as an implicit Trust, and ready Compliance: No doubt but Sarab had this Confidence in Abraham, and therefore readily forfook her Country, and her Kindred, and her Father's House, to follow him into a Land God was to shew him. Another Instance of her mighty Patience and Submission, was the yielding up her only Son to the Disposal of his Father, who was commanded, and refolv'd to offer him up a Sacrifice; not yielding him without the greatest Sorrow and Reluctance in the World, but yielding him, notwithstanding The Child of fo many Promifes on God's part, and fo much Expectation and Defire on her's, and the only Child of her old Age, must needs be dear beyond Expression: And where is the Mother in the World, that would believe her Husband had receiv'd fo hard and strange a Command from God, as to offer up an innocent and only Son, or that would yield it to him, were she so perswaded? Alraham indeed accounted God was able to raife him up, even from from up w cause Isaac must make Sara problest der casie the her

wa cru wh par va no to

and

fu th co

fi

1

from the Dead; and therefore might offer him up with more Content, and less Reluctance, because he knew that God had promis'd, that in Isaac should his Seed be call'd; and therefore Isaac must be rais'd again, though from the Dead, to make the Promise good: But whether this was Sarab's Faith, does not appear; her Heart, most probably, was not supported by such Hope, but left to struggle with those Difficulties, that tender Mothers only can be sensible of, on such Occafions.

mes

are

Ar-

der-

bey

and

and

and

ach

ful,

icit

Sa-

.e-

111-

in-

n-

n,

al

d

m

in

go,s

n

is

e

The infolent Behaviour of her Maid, under the Favour of her Husband, might have afforded her another opportunity of exercifing her Patience, and shewing a meek and quiet Spirit; but she was not quite so exemplary there, but us'd her cruelly and hardly, and drove her to extremity; which was not of a piece with that unufual part that she had play'd, in offering up her Servant to her Husband's Bed. But I intend to make no other use of her Example in this Case, than to take occasion from it, to consider how a Woman is oblig'd to behave her felf, when the is fure her Husband wanders from her Bed, (a Cafe that happens much too commonly) how far she is concern'd to exercise a meek and quiet Spirit, on fuch Falshood and ill Usage. Some of the ancient Christians, and of the most considerable, were of the Opinion, that it was utterly unlawful for either a Man or Woman to cohabit with each other, notoriously false. It is indeed said, Deut. 24.4. that if a Man put away his Wife, he may not take her again, after she is defiled: And if this

this Reafon hold good, it will follow as well, that if she have committed Adultery, she may not be entertained; because, in this Case, she is much more defiled, than one divorc'd is by a fecond Marriage. But in answer to this, it is to be observ'd, that when it pleases God to give a Reason for his Commands, the Commands can oblige no farther, than the Reason carries them, any other People, but those to whom the Commands are particularly given: This Command would have oblig'd the Fews, without the Reafon annexed to it; but this Command obliges no one else any farther than this Reason will oblige them, which is very little or nothing: It is very visible that the Reason obliges no one without the Command, and therefore only those to whom the Command is given, and therefore Fews alone were tied by it: But neither is it the same Case, for a Man to keep a false Adulteress without ever parting from her, and to take her to Wife again, after she has been once divorc'd and married to another, from whom she is again freed, either by Death, or by Divorce. Neither is that Inference good, that a Man must not live and cohabit with an Adulteress Wife, because she was adjudg'd by the Law to be ston'd to Death. For tho', if the were legally convicted of Adultery, she was to die; yet the Husband was not at all oblig'd to profecute her, or to accuse her: He was at liberty to conceal her Shame, and to forgive her Trespass, if he pleas'd; or he might put her away privately, as Joseph intended to do with the most pure and spotless Virgin

Virg Inde Con and ther Tur it 1 Rill It 1 wit wr WI tru Hu the the W Ba H

fa

b

Virgin Mother. As for the Folly, Scandal, or Indecency of so cohabiting together, they are Confiderations that may make it accidentally, and fometimes unlawful fo to live together: But there is no divine Command, nor any natural Turpitude or Uncleanness in it, that may shew it unlawful for the faithful and innocent Party still to continue with the false and guilty one. It must needs be lawful for the innocent and injur'd, to be patient and forgive, to love and live with, if they can or will, those that have wrong'd them. And if this be true of Men, with respect to faitbless Women, it is certainly true of Women, with respect to false adulterous Husbands; they are undoubtedly at liberty, by the Laws of God, to live and cohabit with them: But as they are at liberty to do this if they will, so are they at liberty, by the Reason of God's Law, to forbear all Commerce with them; the Band that tied them is dissolv'd and broken; and the Husband, without her Confent, has in that kind no farther right to her. The innocent Wife is neither bound to forfake her adulterous Husband, nor bound fo to continue with him; he hath fet her free, and she is at her liberty to do as she will. But yet this Liberty is neither to be humoursome nor lasting; if she again cohabit with her Husband, and live with him as she was wont, she is presum'd to have forgiven his Sin, and to have agreed with him; his former Trespass will not be a just Occasion for her leaving him, when she thinks fit; but new Transgressions give her new liberty: She may endure his Falshood as long as she pleases,

well, may she is by a is to

is to ive a can hem, com-nand Rea-

iges
obIt is
ith-

ore it

ke dihe

ft d

r

pleases, but she is not oblig'd to endure it for Here therefore is room for her Religion and Discretion to shew themselves: She is undoubtedly oblig'd to procure the Conversion of her Husband from his evil Ways, by all the Methods she can take, likely and apt to compass it: but she is not oblig'd to burt berself, for his fake. If, by her foft and gentle Admonitions, or if by sharp and quick Reproaches, she can bring him to a Sense of his ungrateful and injurious Usage, and occasion his Repentance and Amendment, they will be either of them well bestowed; and she will be oblig'd to try them. If it be probable, that the Reproofs of wife and fober People, either spiritual Guides or grave Relations, will prevail to his Conversion, she must endeavour it, with all the Secrecy and Tenderness imaginable; she must not suffer Sin, when she can eafily remove it; and Love and true Concern will make her very diligent, and very willing to effect fo good a Work. But if she be as probably affur'd, that the Man is of churlish Nabal's Humour (as too many Husbands are) fuch a Son of Bélial, that he cannot be spoken to; but the very Discovery of his wicked Folly will make him impudent and shameless, and harden him in his Sin; or if it will, in likelihood, provoke him to use her cruelly, as some of brutal Tempers are inclin'd to do, and cause her to live unhappily the rest of her Time with him, she is not, in that Case, oblig'd to endeavour to reclaim him; for no Man is prefum'd so ignorant of his Duty, as not to know he must not violate the Marriage Bed, and therefore

fore 1
And
wand
temp
Hope
lies r
She
Quie
she of t
to h
and

as fu

rat

ft T th

(

it for

gion

un-

n of

Me-

it;

ike.

1 to

ind

ley

he

le,

le,

ill

ur

2-

n

11

fore there's no need of her teaching him that: And fince it is the Hope alone of reclaiming a wandring Husband, that can make fuch an Attempt reasonable and convenient, and that such Hope is vain in the before-supposed Cases, there lies no Obligation on the Woman to attempt it: She is then at liberty to confult her Peace and Quiet, her Ease and Happiness in the best manner the can think on. If the take care that her Connivance, or dissembled Ignorance, her Compliance and Cohabitation, her Silence, or her Patience and Submission; if she take care that none of these give any Countenance or Encouragement to her unkind and wicked Partner, to continue on and profecute his unlawful Love, she is without Blame; fhe is not oblig'd to make herfelf miferable by any Act of her own, but to live as eafily as she can in that Condition.

The Connivance of a Wife at the stolen Pleafures of her Husband, will hardly be look'd upon as countenancing Sin, or any other than an Act of firong Necessity, and to avoid some greater Evil: The Prefumption will be always on their fide, that they will never eafily endure a Rival in the Affection of their Husbands, if they could remove her. Sarah, indeed, before the Birth of Isaac, out of a strong Desire of seeing the Child born, that was promis'd to Abraham with fo great Prospect of Felicity and Bleffing, gave him her Handmaid Hagar; but in this she has been almost singular; and of this, it seems, she soon herself repented, and return'd to the true Wife again. In a word, a Wife may very innocently permit what she can-

not prevent or hinder; and, by such Permission, keep Possession of her Rights, and defend herself from Wrongs: She may endure her Husband's open Falshood and Adultery, without any Sin or Blame on her part, if she cannot hinder him; and, by this Sufferance and Compliance, (not consenting or agreeing to his Sin) may lawfully enjoy all the Ease and Advantage such Cohabitation can afford her, and avoid all the Mischies and Afflictions that would attend and follow a Separation: Neither Religion nor Discretion prohibit an innocent and virtuous Woman, the living with a false and wicked Husband.

And when the Women find themselves in such Condition, that Separation would undo them quite, or make them at least, extreamly, miserable (which is the Case of most) as they have truly all the need imaginable of a meek and quiet Spirit, fo nothing in the World can stand them in better When Injuries fo quick as this, and Provocations of this Nature fall upon a violent and hafty Disposition; they generally make an everlasting Breach, cut off all hope of Reconcilement, and stop the Way, fometimes, to true Repentance, which mild and prudent Management might have effected. Nothing fo wins upon the obstinate, and melts the firmest, most obdurate Minds, like foft and gentle Ufage; even Silence, when it shews Submission, and not Sullenness, is apter to perswade, than angry Arguments produc'd in opposition. All Men love Power and Superiority, and a meek and quiet Spirit feems to yield it to. them, even when it takes it from them, and diftion ! quish an u and I all M fider The tituc the . urge is no falle tien Inju grea all t no . of · the ky. Aff cife thi

arms

not

the vil

ple fe

arms

4

lion.

rfelf

nd's

n or

ind,

ent-

all

can

lic-

on:

no-

ilfe

ich

em

ole

all

fo

ter

.0-

nd

1-

it,

e,

ve

e,

e

ıt

0

)-

2.

0

S

arms them: Dispute begets Dispute, and Opposition Opposition; but Silence and Submission vanquish without Fighting or Resistance. There is an unaccountable Force in Meekness, Patience, and Forbearance; they cut off all Reply, remove all Matter of Contention, and leave Men to confider with themselves the Injuries they have done: They excite in Men a Sense of Shame, and Gratitude, and Honour, and furnish them with all the Arguments that can be thought upon, and urge them in the Favour of the Innocent. There is nothing, in a word, fo likely to prevail upon a falle Husband, as a meek and quiet Spirit, a patient and discreet Submission under those heavy Injuries. And if it is so likely to succeed in this great Matter, it will certainly be of huge use in all the less Concerns of Life: There is, indeed, no living for a Wife, without a tolerable Portion of this meek and quiet Spirit. The Folly, and the Wickedness of Men, and the perverse unlucky Accidents, that are so frequent in the Course of Affairs, do furnish so many Occasions for the Exercife of Patience and Submission, that she can never think to live with any Peace or Comfort, that will not prepare herfelf against them.

St. Peter uses, moreover, the Example of Sarah; in calling her Husband Lord, to teach the Women to profess their Subjection, and acknowledge the Superiority of their Husbands: The using civil and respectful Terms, is what becomes all People, and Wives especially; but what they are, depends upon Custom and Agreement, and of themselves they are of little value; where Love and

true Respect do not produce them, they are only decent and of good Example: And because that Anger and Impatience do usually occasion hard Terms and unbecoming Language, her giving of her Husband fost respectful Titles, may intimate her to be of a meek and quiet Spirit which keeps People, we fee, within the Bounds of Decency, and always gives good Words, there being hardly any furer Sign of any one's loofing their Temper, than their flying out into Passion, and giving hard

Language.

These are some of the Uses that Wives may make of Sarah's Example: And to dispose them to the getting a meek and quiet Spirit the fooner, the Apostle says it is an Ornament; which is the next Thing to be confider'd, in a word or two. The Use of Ornaments is to set the Wearer off to advantage, and recommend them to the Favour and Esteem of such as see them; it is something that becomes them in the Judgment of other People: And in all these Senses a meek and quiet Spirit is a great Ornament to Wives; it sets them of to great advantage, and recommends them to the Favour and Esteem of all that know them, and converse with them, and does most fensibly engage the Affections of their Husbands; and it is that which becomes them in the Opinion of all wife and good and virtuous People; it is truly a Beauty of the Mind, and pleases all that see it.

It is often feen, that all the things, that Wives intend for Ornaments, are ill-plac'd, and give them neither Grace nor Comeliness, whether they be of Gold, or Silver, or Embroideries, or other things,

thing and neve pleat grav tivat upor B

> God mak lued then mor fequ cluf thei use mee tain pro Cre all me

Th and val gre

Co fro

wh the

pre

things, never fo rare or costly: Whereas this good and gentle Temper, this meek and quiet Spirit, never fails of giving Favour and Acceptance; it pleases People when they are wife and sober, grave and thoughtful, and confider best; it captivates the Judgment: Whereas the rest depend

upon a light and giddy Fancy.

only

that

hard

ing of

mate

keeps

ency,

ardly

nper,

hard

may

hem

oner,

s the

two.

ff to

vour

hing

Peo-

Spi-

n off

the

and

en-

it is

all

ly a

ives

ive

hey

her

igs,

But, lastly, and to crown all, it is in the fight of God of great price. 'Tis Costliness, it seems, that makes all outward Ornaments esteem'd and valued; and if they are of great price, they think them more becoming, and find themselves the more respected for them: By a train of idle Confequences, Folks come to make these vain Conclusions; and 'tis better to yield them than dispute them: The Apostle seems inclin'd to make good use of such a Fancy, and hopes to recommend a meek and quiet Spirit, by telling them that it is of great price, highly esteem'd by God: And certainly he is the wifest and fittest Judge of what is proper and becoming all his Creatures; and if his Creatures understand their Interest, they will, of all things in the World, endeavour to recommend themselves to his Good-liking and Esteem. The Beauty and the Comeliness, that all the Cost and Ornaments in Nature can afford, are of no value when the Show is over: There has been a great deal of Noise and Hurry, Trouble and great Confusion, to little purpose: The Pleasure results from the Gaze and Talk of idle, wanton People, whom they shall hardly see again; who half of them, perhaps, dislike, what the other half approve and praise; and if a Fit of Sickness comes,

or

or a few Years steal on their Heads, then all the rest are lost. The Praise of Men, on such accounts, is but a poor Temptation, and Reward, for such Sollicitude and Care as many of that Sex bestow on outward Ornaments. Half of it, taken in recommending themselves to God by Virtues and good Qualities, would do it most effectually, and

keep them for ever in his Favour.

But upon what account is it, that a meek and quiet Spirit flould be of great price in the fight of God? First, Because it is acting according to Reason: And, Secondly, because it is obeying God's Commands. First, It is acting according to Reason: Reason is the Guide that God hath given to every Man to conduct him in his Course of Living; and when they act according to good Reason, they do as they should; they answer to the End of their Creation, and that is always pleafing to the great Creator; he fees the Work of his Hands prosper. Now to be meek and quiet under Injuries, and hard Usage, that is not otherwise to be avoided or removed, is acting with Reason; 'tis making the best of a bad Busness, endeavouring to be easy under their Sufferings; 'tis doing what People would wish to do, even when they find they cannot: For all Afflictions (we have feen before) are more or less afflicting, as the Mind is more or less prepar'd to bear them: And therefore Injuries and Crosses, and hard Usage, are not so oppressive to meek and quiet Spirits, as they are to violent and furious Tempers; and therefore, 'tis the wifest and most reasonable thing that Folks can do, to be as calm their The in the and Lib hard

who no bea don

Cla

Mil

Spi upo Go pir

> thi he wa it th

> > M ac an m

m th th

L is n

1

calm and gentle as they can, to break the Force of

their Misfortunes by Patience and Submiffion.

The wild Birds beat themselves almost to pieces,

in the same Cage, where tame ones sit and sing;

and yet the Prison is the same, one is as near to

Liberty as t'other. The Wives, that have the

hardest Fortune, seldom mend it by Contention,

Clamour and Impatience; they often lay new Miseries upon themselves by such a Management;

quiet

all the ounts, or fuch effow in res and s and k and fight ng to

eying rding hath ourle good er to ways Vork and not Ling Busiffer-

do, Hicafl to les,

eek ıriind

: 25 lm

whereas a gentle foft Forbearance gives at least no new Provocation to farther ill Ufage, and bears the old with less Difficulty: It is the Wisdom of every Wife to get this meek and quiet Spirit, in order to her Ease and Happiness; and upon that account it is also commanded them by God: For God, designing nothing but the Happiness of all his Creatures, commands them every thing that may procure it; and every thing that he commands, has certainly some Tendency that way, and would, if rightly purfued, conduce to it: This is plain of a meek and quiet Spirit. As the Affairs of this World are manag'd, and as Men govern themselves, there will be so many accidental and defign'd Provocations to Anger and Impatience, that People would be extreamly miserable, if God did not injoin them, by all means, to fit their Minds against them, to bear them quietly and meekly when they came: And therefore 'tis in Kindness to us, that he lays these Laws and Commands upon us: And because he is delighted in our Benefit, and Eafe and Happinefs, therefore he is delighted with our Compli-

ance and Obedience; and therefore a meek and

quiet Spirit is, in his fight, of great price: The happier our Obedience to him makes us, the more delighted God is with it; it is by so much the more

acceptable to him.

But neither does his Goodness and Benignity end here; his Aim is also our eternal Good; the happier our Obedience to his Commands makes us in this World, the happier it will also make us in the World to come. The Commands that carry their Reward with them, whilst we obey them here, have also a Reward annex'd by Promife to them, in the other Life: And therefore there is still the more Encouragement to set about our Duty in these Matters. A meek and quiet Spirit does not only pay itself better than most good Qualities besides, whilst it is exercis'd; but fince it is in the fight of God of great price, it will undoubtedly be amply recompene'd with eyerlasting Peace and Rest, and Quiet in the World to come.

DIS-

Hus

of a

men

reac

Exp

to

and

pra

onl

gre

fto

bh

: The more

e more

ignity

s the nakes ke us that

obey

Pro-

efore

fet .

and

than

is'd;

, it

vith

orld

DISCOURSE XII.

COLOSSIANS III. VERSE 19.

Husbands Love your Wives, and be not Bitter against them.

T Have shewed you already, in general, that all Duties and Obligations to Love and Service, of any fort, arise either from the Sense and Remembrance of Benefits and Favours past, and already receiv'd; or from the Hope and reasonable Expectation of Benefits and Favours to come, and to be receiv'd; and that this is the Foundation and Bottom of our Obligation to pray to, or to praise even God himself, for it is for Blessings only that we praise and pray to him: So that the great Greator has no other Right or Title to the Love, or Honour, Worship, or the Service of his Creature, than what his Benefits or Favours, beflowed and promis'd, give him: It is for our Creation, Preservation, and all the Bleffings of this Life, and for the Hopes and Promises of another, that we are bound to bless and worship God. Our Duty to him is not founded on his inward Excellence, his glorious and adorable Perfections; but on his Mercy and Benignity, his Goodness and his Loving-kindness shewn on all Occasions to us, and evermore expected by us: We love God, because he first loved us, and gave his only begotten Son for us.

And

232 Duty of Husbands to Wives.

And if this be the Case of the Relation betwixt the Creator and his Creature, it is certainly more fo in the Relations one Creature has to another. It is impossible for one of them to have any Obligation to another, either to shew Love or to do Service, but it must arise either from Gratitude and Thankfulness for something good receiv'd, or from the Hope and Profpect of something good to be receiv'd. All Duties of Mankind do therefore mutually infer one another: The Duty of a Subject to his Prince does certainly infer the Prince's Duty to his Subject, fomething i.e. he owes his Subject, call it what, or how you will; he must lay some Obligation or other on him, or he can ask no Duty from him; it is for the fake of what one gives, that the other also is oblig'd to give. Thus I have shewn it is in the Relation of Parent and Child; there is an Obligation laid by one, as the Foundation of the other's Duty; and though these Duties are made Duties by Command of God, yet they are truly Duties, in Nature and Reason, antecedently to any Laws or Commands of God: They are therefore inforc'd by God's Commands, because they are in themselves so reasonable and fit, and to necessary to be observed for the good and quiet of Mankind. God has laid no Obligations on any one to love and ferve another, but for the fake of fomething equivalent to be receiv'd at the other's hands, all Things consider'd and put together. And indeed, there is no Relation commanded by God to discharge its Duty to its Correlative, but has its Correlative commanded

nian Prin Office and part their is d ject a I Par per Go

> m w Si

CO

Di

SET

n becere has m to shew from good me-Manher: cerject, hat, tion im; the Wn Superiour side. ere ion are are ntre ife nd nd ait d

manded to discharge its Duty on the other hand: Princes are as much oblig'd to discharge their Office to Subjects, as Subjects are to their Princes; and Parents are oblig'd as certainly to do their part and office to their Children, as Children to their Parents: The Duty of Princes and Parents is different from the Duty of Children and Subjects, no doubt; but the Duty of one is as much a Duty, as is that of the other. And fince each Party is by Nature and Reason equally oblig'd to perform its Duty, and equally commanded by God fo to do; 'tis not easy to see, how one side comes to look for and expect the Performance of Duty from the other, without discharging its own part: But yet this is the Case most commonly of that fide, that accounts it felf, and is with Reason enough accounted by others, the Thus Princes, Parents, Masters, and Governours remember only the Reasons, and Commands, that give them Power and Authority, and that exact Obedience, Love and Service to them; without remembering the Reason and Commands that oblige themselves to discharge their several Obligations to their Subjects, Children, and their Servants, the very Reason and Bottom of the others Duty; and oftentimes dispence with themselves against both Reason and Command, yet think it very hard and unjust, that their Correlatives should, at any time, relax of their Performance of their feveral Duties. And thus it is too frequently with many Husbands, who are full of Dominion, morolely Imperious, and fometimes Cruel and Tyrannical;

234 Duty of Husbands to Wives.

nical; ever remembring the Submiffion, Duty, Honour and Obedience, that their Wives are tied by Reason and God's Command to pay them; but feldom or never thinking of what they owe, themselves, to those their Wives, by the same Reason and God's Commands. St. Paul here makes no difference; but having faid, in Verse 18. Wives Submit your selves to your own Husbands, as is fit in the Lord; he adds immediately in Ver. 19. in the Words of the Text, Husbands Love your Wives, and be not Bitter against them. Leaving it as much a Duty on the Husbands to Love their Wives, as on the Wives to Submit themselves to their own Husbands: And indeed it is so well and wifely ordered by God Almighty, that whofoever obeys his Commands, in discharging the Duty of his Relation, does thereby make the furest and the readiest Way to the receiving what is due to him from his Correlative. A good Prince is the most likely to find good and obedient Subjects; and good obedient Subjects will most likely engage a Prince to shew himself good and affectionate, and careful of his Subjects: And fo the good and careful Parents and Mafters are the most likely to make or find the most obedient, diligent and faithful Children and Servants: And dutiful obedient Children are the most likely to secure the Care and Affection of Parents to them; and the most diligent and honest Servants are the most likely to find their Masters kindest, and most careful of them; so that, by discharging every one his Duty, the World in general would be happy, and each particular be e is al is a mak ban one per Hu obe ing ma ago

> A an gi

Pla

no

ity,

ied

m;

ve,

me

ere

rfe

ds.

in

ds

m.

to

n-

fo

at

ne

11-

at

d

9-

11

1f

-

d

e

d

e

ń

d

be eafy in their Station and Relation. And this is also the bottom of that common Saying, which is also true and reasonable, that good Husbands make good Wives, and good Wives good Husbands; i. e. there is nothing so likely to engage one Partner to perform his Duty, as the other's performing his. There is no readier way for Husbands to have good Wives, affectionate, obedient, careful and faithful, than by following the Dictates of Reason, as well as the Commands of God, to Love them, and not be Bitter against them. We have therefore, in the first Place, to see, what is understood by Husbands Loving their Wives; and, in the second, what it is, not to be Bitter against them.

There is a Love peculiar to every Relation, that a Man can stand in by Nature, or can contract by Choice, and it is truly distinct from every other Affection. Thus there is a Love of Honour and Esteem due to Virtue, Excellence and Perfection, and this is commonly the Love we pay to Princes. great and brave People of all forts, and commonly our Superiours. There is also a Love of Friendship due to Merit and good Qualities, either real or imagined, generally paid to our Equals. There is also a Love of natural Relations, different from the rest, and which grows up with us, infentibly, from our Infancy. And the mutual Love of Marriage is distinct from all the rest; and therefore when People are call'd upon to Love, they are called upon to pay that Affection that is peculiar to the Relation they stand in to such a Party. Now the Love of

236 Duty of Husbands to Wives.

Husbands is chiefly seen in these three Things. First, in being kindly affection'd to their Persons: Secondly, in being faithful to their Vows: And Thirdly, in taking care of, and making all due

sha

It i

tee

a]

ha

ref

de

bu

no

m

0

Provision for them.

First, It is seen in being kindly affection'd to their Persons. This indeed is what is so properly call'd Love, that nothing besides is thought so; and it is fo effentially necessary to the making Marriage easy and happy, that nothing elfe can do it: And where Men marry without liking of the Person of their Wives, if they do not intend to be miferable themselves, yet they may reasonably be prefum'd to intend to make their Wives fo, because it is the likeliest thing in the World to make them fo; and there are very few Women in the World, that would, upon fuch Supposal, marry; because they know, that tho' a Liking of their Person will not of it self make them happy, yet, that without it nothing else will. It is certain that Religion, Virtue, and Discretion, and good Qualities, and Birth, and Education, and Fortune, and Estate are all to be considered, in their several measures and degrees, to make a married Life truly and laftingly happy; but yet, without a Love and Liking of the Person, there will be no fuch thing as true and lafting Happiness: All the other things will not effect this End, unless this also be added to them; they will make Men civil, and of good Behaviour; and confequently, the Wives shall not be cruelly and brutally us'd; they shall not be miserable, nor pitiable to Strangers and Standers-by; but they shall

ings.

fons:

And

due

heir

all'd

it is

eafy

And

n of

fer-

ore-

ule

ake

the

leir

et,

iat

11-

ne,

fe-

ed

h-

ill

s:

n-

ce

2-

1-

i-

shall not find themselves happy for all that. It is not Honour, and Respect, and perhaps Esteem, that will make the Wives happy; but a Tenderness of Affection, which they had rather have, than all things else; and, without which, the rest are vain Formality, and an insipid Courtship, a Sacrifice without a Heart, and mere Hypocrify.

Virtue, good Qualities, and the other Confiderations above-mentioned, are not only very defirable, and of great Service, in themselves; but are also very useful, as they recommend the *Person* to Favour and Acceptance; and if they do not that; they contribute little to making the married Life happy; they help to make it not so miserable, as it would be without them, but

of themselves they never make it happy.

I would not, by all this, be understood to recommend a Face or Shape, or Mien and Figure; or fay, that no Man ought to marry without Form or Beauty; but understood to fay, that no Manought to marry, where fomething or other does not recommend the Person to his Liking and Acceptance; because, without this Liking and Affection, he will never make his Partner happy, nor himself; which he is certainly oblig'd to do, as much as in him lies. God hath not tied Men to Reason strictly in these Matters, nor to shew a found unerring Judgment in their Choices; these Affections are under the Dominion of the Fancy, and the Choice is innocently govern'd and directed by Imagination; and whatever any Manthinks beautiful and comely, graceful and taking, is certainly fo to him, whatever 'tis to other People. There is some-

thing most divinely wise in this Contrivance and Disposal, by which a world of Mischief and Con. fusion is avoided, that would undoubtedly arise on these Occasions, but for this great Variety and Strength of Fancy and Imagination, by which Men fee at first, and are still held on feeing, and are pleas'd with Beauties, and good Qualities, that are not fo well discern'd by others, nor acceptable to them. Useful are all the Faculties that God hath given us; even those, that often cheat us, fometimes do us Service. Whoever therefore marries, without this fanciful Affection in some degree and measure, can never make his Partner happy; because it is that in which she chiefly places her Happiness, and without which she does not find herfelf happy; and after all that can be faid, no one is, or can be happy in this World, but they who think, and find themselves to be fo.

Few Women are fo weak as to think they can be happy with the Affection of the Mind only; but they all of them know, that where that is wanting, all besides is mere Shew and Appearance of Ease and Happiness: They know that Wealth and Estate gives them not quiet and contented Minds; and they know that Religion, Virtue, and Discretion, and a world of good Qualities are lost and infignificant, where the Affection of Person does not recommend and set them off: Sometimes they are not feen at all, nor any Complacence taken in them, where the Party that exercises them is not acceptable, or finds no Favour in the other's Eyes: So that it comes to pas, that

many be fo creti for v which (if t Affe ame Fau Inco kin tion

> cis ou for Cl ea

> not

Hu

ln tie CC tl

qu

ai fo 3 e

many

and

Con-

arise

and

Men

are

are

able

God

us,

fore

me

ner

efly

fhe

hat

his

ves

can

ly;

is

ice

th

ed

e,

es

of

f:

1-

<-

ır

it

y

many Men are counted happy, and might indeed be so in the good Qualities, and Virtue, and Discretion of their Partners, who yet are otherwise, for want of this Affection of the Heart, through which the rest are lost, and undiscerned, and which (if there) would make them both happy: This Affection will supply many Defects, and make amends for many Failings; this will cover many Faults, and make a world of Evils and domestick Inconveniencies lighter and easier: So that, in kindness to himself, a Man of Wisdom and Discretion will be careful never to marry where he cannot literally comply with God's Commands to Husbands, to Love their Wives.

The Love of every other Relation may be exercis'd and shewn in kind and proper Effects, without this inward and fincere Affection to the Perfon; as that of Parents to their Children, and Children to their Parents; Brothers and Sifters to each other; Friends and Neighbours, and Acquaintance, Masters and Servants, Superiours and Inferiours; each may discharge their several Duties to each the other, in Acts of Kindness becoming, and requir'd of their Relation; and yet, through fome Misfortune and Mistake, Disgust and Provocation, may not truly love their Perfons, and that, as it may happen, without Blame, and things may still go on fairly and decently on either hand: But this Relation calls for Personal Love and Tenderness, and is not satisfied with all the Expressions and Effects of Love and Kindness that can be shewed, but must be secure both of the Heart and Principle, or else it languishes and

and dies. In a word, it is a vain thing for any Man to marry with Hopes of being happy and at ease himself, or making his Partner so, without fome liking of her Person; and therefore they, who look upon this Matter as religious, and intend to lead a virtuous and a fober Life, will never fuffer any, or all the Confiderations in the World, to induce them to marry, where there is any fort of Aversion, or great Indifference to a Person, or where, at least, there is not great probability of

loving.

The Peace and Acquiescence of the Mind is certainly to be preferr'd to all other Confiderations whatever, as being indeed the End of all the Labours and Pursuits of Life; every thing we endeavour, or do, being in order (we intend and hope) to the attaining Quiet and Content. Now this a Man can hardly have, that is not easy at his own home; and that a Man can never be, that lives in constant view of an unacceptable Object, and converses with one whom he either hates, or despises. And it is a huge Mistake to think, that either Portion or Alliance, or any other fuch Convenience, will make Men Compensation and Amends, and give that Ease and Quiet which mutual Love and Tenderness will give. All those Conveniencies can only furnish out a better Table, more Attendance, and finer Garb: Whereas both Men and Women find they are, and can be very milerable and discontented in the midst of all such Plenty, whilst they are fure that, in the mean time, they want that Kindness and Affection of Heart, that only makes a great Fortune easy and useful and F his C

to the

relifh

Man not, is co cann

need to e And

con

Co not the wh

wh do to fon

we

ent gii

mg ing an

ea

to them, and that would make a meaner Fortune

relish much better.

rany

nd at

hout

who

nd to

fuf-

orld,

fort

, or

y of

d is

era-

f all

we

and

this

own

s in

on-

fes.

her

eni-

ids,

ove

en-

At-

len

ife-

ich

ne,

rt,

ful

to

Confidering, therefore, how much the Peace and Happinels of a Man's whole Life depends upon his Choice, he can neither answer it to God, not Man, nor to himself, that marries where he does not, or cannot love. And therefore, since a Man is commanded by God to love his Wife, and that he cannot love where and when he pleases, he must needs be understood to be commanded; First, Not to enter upon Marriage, where he does not love: And, Secondly, when he is married, to continue his Love, and take all Courses that are proper to confirm and strengthen that Affection, and to avoid all manner of Occasions that may weaken and de-

cay it in his Mind.

First, A Man is certainly oblig'd by God's Command to love his Wife; and because this is not to be done whenever a Man pleases, he is therefore oblig'd not to enter upon Marriage where he does not love: A Man is not oblig'd, we know, to marry, but he is oblig'd to love when married; and fince that can hardly be, if he does not love before, he is certainly oblig'd not to marry if he cannot love. It may not be reaionable for a Man to enter upon such or fuch an Office; but it is very reasonable he should not enter on it, with an utter Incapacity of discharging it as he ought. And therefore, the contracting of Children, young and uncapable of knowing what themselves and Partners are, or shall be; and fetting the Years of Confent very forward to each Party, whatever other good Ends it may

ferve, or prevent Evil, yet it is certainly of evil consequence with respect to the Peace and Hap. piness of the succeeding Life, if Love and mu. tual Liking do not follow. That Practice aims most commonly at securing an Estate and Fortune: But it were better, generally, if let alone; because the attaining of that End is not the principal and best Design of Marriage, but something in order to it: It will make those, who are already at ease, much easier; but it will not give Agreement, Union of Affection, Ease and Satisfaction of Mind, which is to be the Bottom and Foundation of People's Happiness: Upon this account 'tis also probable, that so many People of great Degree and Rank are made miserable, and more miserable than their Inferiours, by their imprudent Choices. Respect is generally had to nothing but Birth and Quality, to Fortune and Alliance, without regard to Person, Shape and Figure, to Virtue and good Qualities, and other Endowments proper to engage and hold the Affections: And hence they become splendidly and exemplarily unhappy, as if it were the Sport of Fortune to level all Mankind; and, by some odd Difaster, or their own Folly, to reduce the greatest People to an Equality of Misery and Trouble with their Inferiours; that all the World might be alike happy, all things confidered and compar'd together.

There can, indeed, no Good be reasonably expected, where Affection does not first engage, before Religion ties the married Pair together. A Christian, truly, cannot, with a good Conscience,

a fol Marr sciou Hear like, fider: is th who God can. why whe again rent: they Chil of ic Aut fhev Filia thor rabl fore over the cou Par die mu fusa is a

nor v

nor

tor

which,

evil Hapmuaims Forone; prinhing Irearee-Ction ounount reat nore pruno-Alli-Fi-Enffecand t of odd eatouorld and

exbe-A

nor

nor with common Honesty and Truth, make such a solemn Promise of Affection, as the Form of Marriage calls for and requires, when he is conscious to himself that he has nothing of it in his Heart; but finds, it may be, an Avertion and Diflike, but yet goes on for other Reasons and Confiderations: He cannot answer it to God; for he is then deceiving, and, it may be, ruining one whom at that time he feriously professes, before God, that he will love, and make as happy as he There are, in a word, a thousand Reasons why every Man should take all heed of marrying where he finds he cannot love; and none at all against fuch Caution: And therefore, some Parents would do well to confider ferioufly, before they press their Commands too closely on their Children, to marry where there is no likelihood of loving, or of being belov'd. They have a great Authority, no doubt, in these Affairs, (as I have thewn you already, at large, in treating of the Filial and Parental Duties) but no one has Authority enough to make an innocent Party miferable; and if a Parent had, he would undoubtedly forego it. And therefore, 'tis not good to be over-rigorous, where it may reasonably be thought the Children's Refusal proceeds from some unaccountable Difgust, or an incurable Aversion. The Parent may confider, that, in fuch a Case, the Obedience and Compliance of a Child may make her much more miserable, than Disobedience and Refusal would make her faulty; but when a Man is at his Liberty, and under no Constraint, for him to marry without Love, is inexcufable. From all

which, it appears exceeding plain, that, for Hustbands to comply with God's Commands, and St. Paul's Advice, to love their Wives, it is absolutely necessary that they make such Choice as may engage their Affection: And that they never marry where they cannot like, for any worldly Interest whatsoever.

But to comply with this Command, it is not enough to choose at first, where Men can like: for they are also bound to continue this their Love to their Lives end; i. e. as long as they are Husbands; and therefore they must needs be oblig'd to take fuch Courses as are proper to confirm and strengthen their Affection, and to avoid all manner of Occasions that may wear it out, or weaken it. Some of the ancient Christians (as we have feen) would allow the Wives to employ more Art and Cost in decking and adorning of themselves, than other single Women; because they judg'd it absolutely necessary to the Peace and Happiness of their Lives, to preserve and secure to themselves the Affections of their Husbands, and therefore indulg'd that to them, which they denied to others: And it is no less necessary, to the fecuring this their Peace and Happiness, that Men should take more care than ordinary, still to continue their Affection to them; and should not fuffer Errors and Mistakes, Miscarriages and light Offences, Infirmities and heedless Indiscretions, or the like, to alienate their Hearts from them, or give them a flight and despicable Opinion of them; for that will quickly grow to Coldness and Indiference towards them, and then they are not far from

from fecre

Defe not at la and

And felv they Mil

tak tior nefl

mo To the

will any cei

date in to

cu ha go

is m

it

from personal Dislike, and an Aversion, although secret.

They, who cannot bear with many Failings and Defects, and make a great many Allowances, are not well fitted for Society and Friendship, even at large, and much less for Society so constant and continued, as the married State requires: And therefore, if Men will not confider with themselves the Imperfections of humane Nature; if they will not remember their own Mistakes and Miscarriages; if they will be unreasonable, and take Advantages, and make ill-natur'd Observations and Reflections on the Follies and the Weaknesses of their Partners, and treasure them up in Memory, and referve them to feed their ill Humour, and make them Occasions of Distast, and Topicks of Upbraidings and unfeemly Revilings; they will quickly see an end of Peace and Quietnels, and find their Affection cool and languish. When once Men fall into this Perverfness, and take any Ease in entertaining such Surmises and Conceits, as will (although infenfibly) beget a cheap and vile Opinion of them, they have laid the Foundation of future Discontent and Discord, and are in Readiness and Disposition for Aversion and Hate to follow; and then the greatest Care and Circumfpection, the most observant and discreet Behayiour of the Women, is not able to regain their good Opinion and Esteem. When once the Heart is cold, or alienated and estrang'd, it is a Work of mighty Difficulty to bring it on again, and warm it into new Affection: And therefore every thing, that tends to such estranging of it, is to be care-

Hufabsoice as

never

orldly

is not like; their ey are

t, or s (as

they and cure

they

that Il to

not ight, or

or em;

diffar

om

fully avoided by all that would themselves be easy, and make their Partners so also.

The Women are prefum'd, because it is so much their Interest, as well as Duty, to attend this Mat. ter carefully, to preserve the Affection and Esteem of their Husbands, by all the fair and virtuous Methods they can take; but that will not fuffice, unless the Men will make it easy to them by Prudence and Good-nature: They must be also dispo. fed to think well of, and take in good part, the Endeavours of the others; for it is not enough, that a thing be well done, unless it be also well taken: Without this Consideration and Goodness of Disposition, there will be no such thing as Love and mutual Kindness: For all Creatures are imperfect, and stand in need of Patience and Forgiveness at one another's hands: And in a constant Conversation, and the Management of many and various Family Affairs, there will unavoidably arise many Occasions of Disagreement, and Disagreement, tast; and if, on both sides, there be not a Readiness to make the kindest Construction of each other's Actions, to believe the best, and lay the Faults upon unlucky Accidents, and difregarda great many Inconveniencies, and pass them over patiently and gently, the conjugal Affection will be quickly loft; for it only lives by kind Forbearance, mutual Condescension, and a good Esteem of each the other.

And when a Man considers, that it is his Interest and his Ease, as well as Duty, to love his Partner, and that he ceases to be quiet and happy when he begins to dislike, or be averse to her;

he wind part of that Choiseft a whice Quies bly part, will then Mill

few fo in I cauf

> of t (at

Wi Ch and the

wa

pit fee

the

nę

eafy,

much

Mat-

leem

tuous

ffice,

Pri-

ifpo.

the

ugh,

well

Iness

ove

im-

For-

tant

and

bly

Dif-

idi-

ach

the

da

ver

rill

ar-

em

e-

t-

oy

10

247

he will find it worth his while to take some care and pains to feed, and to continue his Affection: It will not be thought fo indifferent a thing, to like or diflike, even with respect to this World, that it should be a matter of Humour, and not Choice, to be a good Husband; for it is the wifeft and most useful thing that he can do, and that which will contribute most to his Content and Quiet; and therefore, for his own fake, a tolerably prudent Man, confidering he can never change it, will make the best of his Condition; which will be by making it most easy and delightful to them both; fince, in all likelihood, of the many Millions of married People in the World, a very few are happy and at eafe, whose Partners are not to in like measure with them.

I have dwelt thus long upon this Subject; because, though it deserve the most serious Consideration, yet it feldom has it. It would not be out of the way, to fay, that most Men in the World (at least in these Parts) are happy, or unhappy, according to the Choice they make of their So far at least is certain, that a bad Choice will trouble all the rest of their Felicities, and hinder Men from being eafy with them: And therefore, fince it is of so great Consequence, it wants, and ought to have a great and fober Deliberation. It is the Means and Method God hath pitch'd upon, to continue on the World, till he fees fit to put an end to it; and tho' he hath implanted in Men fuch Desires as are conducive to the End he hath defign'd; yet he hath given them Reason, Judgment, and Understanding to direct

R 4

and guide them in their Choice, and to give the Check to their Imagination in some measure, and distinguish them from all inferiour Creatures. They are not, like those Creatures, at their liberty to wander up and down as common to the whole Species; but they must fix on one particular and proper Object, and settle there: As their first Father had but one Eve, so are his Children to content themselves with such like Choice, and there abide till Death shall set them at their liberty. This is the original Appointment of Marriage, even in Paradise, when Man was high in God's Favour.

Now, because it is impossible, where there are two Persons and two Wills, but there will be Dispute in Matters of Debate and Doubt, which shall be uppermost and superiour, God hath decided it, as well by natural Indications, as by pofitive Commands, that Man shall reign and govern, and therefore Women are to be obedient and submissive: But, in return for this Submission and Obedience, Man is to love his Wife, and to affect her, above all the World. This he is commanded by God to do; and because it is not in Man's power to love and like whom, and whereever he will, he is in Reason oblig'd to marry no where but where he can love; he cannot otherwife comply with God's Commands: The Reafonableness and Necessity of this, I have been trying to shew from many great Inconveniencies and grievous Mischiefs, that are likely, and do usually arise from marrying otherwise, upon mere worldly Confiderations. Not, that many other things, belides

beside well undo or car virtu Qual all o a M is for not the mac can that

Me the Cootion we for cor

W

it

besides Affection to the Person, are not to be well considered and sought after; for they are undoubtedly, and Men without them never will or can be happy, especially religious Education, virtuous and discreet Behaviour, and other good Qualities, as well as Birth and Fortune: But that all other Considerations are of little use to make a Marriage happy, where Affection to the Person is found wanting; all Advantages imaginable will not make a Woman easy, where the Affection of the Heart is wanting: And since the Wife is to be made as happy as she can by Marriage, a Husband cannot answer it to God, nor her, nor to himself, that marries with Aversion and Dislike.

e the

, and

ures.

eir li-

o the

ticu-

their

dren

and

ir li-Mar-

th in

are

I be

hich

de-

po-

go-

ient

Tion d to

om-

t in

ere-

no ierearyind

lly

gs, des And it is yet more reasonable, that when the Men are married, they should still continue on their Love; and, in order to that, should take all Courses to confirm and strengthen their Affection, and avoid all manner of Occasions that may weaken and decay it. Because, without this personal Love, they will be in great danger of not continuing true and faithful to their Vows; and of not making such Provision for them as is sit and reasonable, which are the other Particulars in which the Love of Husbands is requir'd to shew itself, of which, Gre,

DISCOURSE XIII.

COLOSSIANS III. VERSE 19.

Husbands Love your Wives, and be not Bitter against them.

Having shewn you, that the Laws of God, enjoyning the Performance of such and such Duties to Parties so and so related, are all in conformity to right Reason and the Laws of Nature; and exact and require no other Performances than what are necessary to the fair and due Discharge of all those several Duties: And that all the feveral Duties of Relations of all forts (none in the World excepted, no not that between the great Creator and his Creature) do mutually infer each other, and are therefore due, and paid for the fake of each the other: And that, in the particular Case before us, God haveing made it first in Nature and Reason, and, asterwards, by positive Command, the Duty of Wives to be submissive, subject, and obedient to their Husbands, had also, first in Nature and Reaion, and after, by express Commands, made it the Duty of Husbands to love their Wives. And having shewn, that the Love of Husbands to their Wives confifted in these three Particulars: 1. In being kindly affectioned to their Persons. 2. In being faithful to them, in keeping to their Promise and Engagement. And, 3. In taking care of, and making all due provision for them: I had only time to speak to the first ParPartifity of fight count Preparty be. and feel or that Wind when fond man

ma ried pru tim

mo

put

cha

in

nei

lar fho be Er

mi

in

Particular, and to try to shew the absolute Necesfity of the Wife's Person being acceptable in the fight of her Husband, (let it be upon what account it will) and that, without fuch favourable Prepoffession, the Man will neither be himself eafy, nor make his Partner happy as she should This I infifted on, for a world of Reasons and Confiderations, fuch as all Men know and feel the force of, whether they act against them, or comply with them: And upon this account, that Husbands are commanded to love their Wives, yet have it not in their power to love where, and whenever they please, it is but reafonable to think they are commanded not to marry where there is any fecret Diflike, and much more where there is any Avertion; because this puts them into an utter Incapacity of ever difcharging their Duty, and obeying God's Commands; and moreover, that when they are married, they are oblig'd to take all reasonable and prudent Courses to settle and confirm, and continue in their Love, and carefully to avoid all manner of Occasions that may weaken and decay it in their Minds.

9.

not

Fod,

luch

1 in

Na-

for-

and

And

all

hat

do

ue,

nd

ve-

af-

of

eir

12-

de

es.

ds

u-

r-

g

n

r

To all this I have already spoken at large. I am now to go on and consider the other Particulars, in which the Love of Husbands is to be shewn towards their Wives: And the next is, the being faithful to them, the being true to their Engagements, Promises, and solemn Vows. This mutual Fidelity is so essentially necessary to Marriage, that the Breach and Violation of it, succeeding notoriously, does not only dissolve the most

re-

religious Contracts, and most solemn Promises of Marriage, and fet the innocent Party at full liberty, but it dissolves the Marriage Band it self immediately before God. It is indeed the Bot. tom and Foundation of all those Promises and Contracts, the very Reason on which they proceed, and the Supposition upon which all such Engagements are built, although not verbally express'd. And therefore, when this Supposition fails, when this Ground and Foundation of the Contract and Engagement is remov'd and overturn'd, the Contract is it felf no longer binding to the innocent and unoffending Party: They may proceed in their Engagements if they please, and choose; but the Transgression of the other side sets them at liberty, notwithstanding the most serious and most solemn Promises; the Transgression (that is to fay) that succeeds and follows, not that which goes before the Contract: There is no retrospect to be had, no looking back to Offences committed heretofore; the greatest Guilt of that kind possible dissolves no following Obligation, because the Offence must have relation to the Party contracted with, who is hereby supposed to be extreamly injur'd and abus'd; and therefore regard is only to be had to those Offences that do violence to fuch Contract, which must be only fuch as follow after fuch a Contract.

And what does all this shew, but that the Nature of a Christian Marriage is such, that it does unavoidably require mutual Fidelity, and the Performance of their Promise made to forsake all other Persons, and to adhere to each the other,

fo

fo lor

and i

press'

pleate

are 6

tle f

make

fame

And

fence

Spe &

mili

it fa

is (

Fid

and

for

lat

bre

ry

gr

an

fo

b

V

ft

fo long as they both shall live? This is suppos'd and implied in all Contracts; and verbally express'd, and actually engag'd for in all compleated Marriages: And to this Fidelity the Men are equally obliged with the Women, how little foever they observe, or think of it. make the fame Promise; they are tied by the fame Reason, and by the like Command of God: And if there be some difference betwixt the Offence of one Party, and of the other, with respect to Reputation, and the Confusion of Families, it is not what concerns the Conscience, it falls not properly under our Confideration. It is (we have feen) the Bottom of all Contracts: Fidelity is what the Men engage for, on their part, and the true Reason of the Women's engaging for the fame, on theirs. And therefore, in the Violation of it, there is Falshood and Injustice, they break a folemn Promife, and they do a great Injury: Let any one confider whether those be not great Matters, and not to be flightly pass'd over: Whether it be not what himself expects from her, and is not, for the Violation of it, ready to call for Fire from Heaven for Vengeance: But if a Man be so far gone in favour to himself, as not to think very heinously of his own Offences in this Instance, let him, to get a truer sight of the matter, and to pass a better Judgment on it, let him remove it from himself, and consider it in the case of his Mother or his own Daughter; whether he would not think them injur'd in the highest manner, if either of their Husbands should prove falle, and wander from their Beds, in purfuit

ifes of ull liit felf Bot-

Bots and prol fuch

bally fition f the over-

ding may and

fets feri-

Mion not s no

nces hat

on, the

ore lat

be

aes ne

ie ie

0

fuit of unhallowed Pleasures: And just as he imagines they would take the Falshood and Injustice of their Husbands, let him imagine that his own Wife takes his, and bears it with the same Concern and Heaviness. It is just as reasonable and sit that his own Father, or his Son-in-Law should injure and afflict his Mother and his Daughter, as he should injure and afflict his Wife, by such his Falshood. And if the Sense of their injurious grievous Treatment move him either to Rage or Pity, it may sufficiently instruct him, what deep Wounds his own vile Perjuries are dealing daily to his Partner.

The deep Resentment of this Injury by the Wives, is therefore a farther Aggravation of its Heinousness: This Breach of Faith is not a piece of Falshood and Injustice of little or no moment, and which is easily pass'd by, and born; but one of the sharpest Injuries that can be done, and the worst taken by those that are concern'd: God has so order'd it, that, of all Wrongs, it should be the most grievous and afflicting, and felt most fenfibly; to make Men, certainly, most careful to avoid the doing it. And therefore, tho' all Falsehood of this nature be exceeding finful, yet certainly those Husbands are yet more unpardonable, who, to their Falshood, add an impudent Contempt of Decency and good Fame, and openly afflict and grieve their Partners by an abominable Commerce. This Unkindness is not necessary even to the Prosecution of their wicked Purposes, and therefore the more cruel and inhumane: It is not only in defiance to Religion and good Morals, and to the reproach repro-King c and j honor give

> latio kind Hear Wiv

> great

eafy tisfa mer Hus

renc

The spit cea

upo lon kin

furing and tio

an

W

reproach of good Laws, and the scandal of a Kingdom, but in it self unnecessarily barbarous and provoking; it were more manly, just and honourable to be a good Hypocrite, and not to give such publick Offence and Grief, where they are bound to give all Ease and Happiness. This is a great Aggravation of Falshood, and makes it

cruel, as well as impudent and injurious.

ma-

tice

wn

On-

and

uld

as

his

ous

or

ep

ily

he

its

ce

nt,

ne

he

as

be

11-

to

-

-

3,

t

d

e

Not but that the most conceal'd and secret Violations of the Marriage-Faith are also in effect unkind; and alienate infenfibly, and by degrees, the Hearts and Affections of Husbands from their A great many Accidents occasion Differences and Contests, as well as a Diversity of Humours; and the Society is, notwithstanding them, easy enough, and to be born with tolerable Satisfaction; but that great Change and Estrangement of the Mind, that usually arises from the Husband's Falshood, and adulterous Thefts, is to the Wife remarkably conspicuous and uneasy: That Coldness and Indifference that succeeds, in spite of all their Art, and faint Endeavours to conceal it, by Civilities and formal Kindness, is easily and foon diftinguish'd and discern'd. And therefore upon this account it was so necessary to insist so long upon the first particular Instance, the being kindly affectioned to the Person; because it is the furest and most likely way to prevent Men's falling into these adulterous and abominable Snares; and because the giving way to these corrupt Affections, is the most fure and ready way to dissolve and break the strongest Marriage-love that ever was: And therefore, if it be so absolutely necessa-

ry

ry for Husbands to love their Wives, as God commands, there is nothing in the World so likely to retain their Affections, as being faithful to their Vows.

When Men give way to new Engagements, it is but reasonable to conclude, the old one's are wearing out; they will indeed wear out, in spite of all Defigns and Refolutions to the contrary: Men are not so much Masters of themselves, as they imagine, upon fuch Occasions; they do not understand their Power and Strength sufficiently, when they intend to be good Husbands, and yet frequent the Company of wicked Women; the virtuous Love declines as fast, and far, as the diforderly and criminal Affection gains ground: Those Passions seldom or never meet in one Man; a Man may think they will, but the longer he tries, the more he will find himself deceiv'd. He may intend and purpose that, notwithstanding all his Follies and Transgressions, he will still retain his old Affection to his Partner; but 'tis not in his Power; 'tis loft infenfibly, and by degrees, by wandring new Defires. It ends, at best, in ceremonious, formal, cold Civilities; but much more commonly in fecret Hatred and Aversion, in outward Quarrel and Contest, churlish or brutal Usage; nay, and sometimes in very Tragical Events. The wifest Husband in the World cannot foresee the Consequences of his Falshood, nor know where it will end in this World. therefore, if a Man be sensible and convinc'd, that very much of, if not all the Peace and Quiet of his Life, depends upon the Mind and Affection he

he h the it is, of t less mut Rela vou ligh to t as th thei and find der is p con

he b

lation post eith the une

OWI

as i

tion

the cha the dife

oth

he bears to, and the good Opinion and Esteem he has of his Partner, he will, of all things in the World, keep faithful to her; for so we find it is, (and wisely ordered too) that the Affection of the Wise makes not the Husband happy, unless the Husband also love the Wise: It is the mutual Kindness of each Party that blesses the Relation; it is not the receiving Love and Favour from another, that is truly pleasing and delightful, unless our Minds are also well affection'd to them; and we find ourselves as well dispos'd as they, to make as kind Returns.

So Parents do not feel the Joy and Pleasure of their Relation, in receiving Love and Honour and Obedience from their Children, unless they find themselves possess'd of that Affection, Tenderness and Care towards their Children, that is properly parental; half at least is wanting, to compleat their Joy and Happiness, where their own Hearts are not prepar'd with such Affection as is truly parental, and peculiar to that Rela-

tion.

com-

kely

il to

ts, it

s are

fpite

ary:

s, as

not

itly,

yet

the

dif-

ind:

Ian;

r he

He

gall

tain

t in

, by

ere-

ore

Hut-

atal

ical

an-

nor

ind

hat

of

ion

he

It must be much more so, certainly, in the Relation betwixt Wise and Husband; 'twill be impossible for either of them to be happy singly, either in the Affection of their Partner, or in their own; they must unite their Minds, or be uneasy: We cannot possibly be well and easy in the World, unless that other People will discharge the several Duties which they owe us; but the greatest Pleasure and Content arises from the discharging well the Duties that we owe to others; that it might always be more in our own power

power to make our selves happy, than in any one's else to hinder us from being so. Let never Man or Woman think of being happy in the Affection of each the other, unless they are themselves as tenderly affection'd to the other, as the other is to them. And therefore 'tis a vain Mistake, for any Husband to think he shall live easily and kindly with his Partner, be her Affection never so strong and true to him, whilst he is, in his Heart, indifferent, or cold to her. And upon this account, whoever would be truly happy (as far as Men can be in such Relation) must certainly be faithful to his Vows, and never wander.

Were not Religion any ways concern'd in this Dispute, were there no Obligation on the Conscience urging this Fidelity; yet common Prudence and Experience would prescribe it, as the likeliest Method of securing that Affection of Husbands to their Wives, that is truly necessary to the Discharge of that Relation, and to the promoting and maintaining Domestick Peace and Happiness, in the manner that is needful. therefore need only to mention the Command of God, enjoyning this Fidelity, which, added to the former Reasons, makes the Transgressor inexcufable. It is truly so much a Man's Interest to be true and faithful to his Vows and Promifes, that 'tis enough barely to fay, it is his Duty also. It is one of ten Commandments, which argues its Importance most convincingly. All married People are forbid Adultery; and, in order to fulfiling that Command, are bid to love each other; for they,

they, each o other,

To of Lil the E God's one, this i Rule Men Scrip Blam and a ture tions cond parti thou have expr thou time and pl ea ter (lieve allo ned

have

Ma

mai

they, who love each other, will be faithful to each other; and they, who are not faithful to each other, will not, cannot long continue loving each

otheras they ought.

any

never

1 the

nem-

s the

Mif-

eafi-

Ction

s, in

up-

рру

nust

vàn-

this

on-

ru-

the

of

ary

10-

and

iall

lof

the

cu-

be

nat

It

its

0-

ng

or

y,

To all these Reasons and Commands the Men of Liberty have nothing to oppose in earnest, but the Examples of fome Men in Scripture, high in God's Favour; who yet had more Wives than one, or at least had many Concubines. But to this it may be answer'd, that Example is not the Rule of Life, but Precept: A great many good Men have done very ill things; and when the Scriptures recount their evil Actions, without Blame or Censure, they do not thereby justify and approve them: If there be a Rule in Scripture cenfuring and forbidding fuch and fuch Actions, it is enough; those Actions are sufficiently condemn'd by fuch a general Rule, though not particularly blam'd in the Recital of them. should have known Murder and Adultery to have been great Sins in David, by their being expresly prohibited by God's Commands, although the Scriptures had told us an hundred times, that he was a Man after God's own Heart, and had not mentioned God's being highly difpleased at themin particular. His being a Man after God's own Heart, would not have made us believe that Murder and Adultery were innocent and allowed in him, whilst we found them condemned by God's Word in general; but we should have concluded, that David was, except in these Matters, a careful Worshipper of God, and, for many good Qualities, dear to him. But however, fome S 2

fome of these Liberties might be permitted in those Days and Places, for Reasons proper and peculiar to them, which would not be fit for other Folks, at other times. And lastly, it is most reasonable to look to the first Institution of it, which was in Paradife, where Adam had but one Eve: And in the Restoration of the World by Noah and his Sons, after the Flood, where each of them had but one Wife: And yet, at these two Seasons, there was the greatest occasion of multiplying People to inhabit the World, that ever yet has been; and whatever Permissions, or Indulgences follow'd afterwards 'tis certain that our Saviour Christ reduc'd it to its first Appointment and Institution, and so the Christian World has ever fince maintained it.

The other Particular, in which the Husbands are to shew they love their Wives, is, in taking care of, and making all due provision for them: To maintain them as becomes their Partners, whilft they live, and to leave them wherewithalto fublift, according to their Estate and Condition, in case they happen to survive them. They are, according to good Sense and Reason, and to the Customs of our Country, Friends and Companions to their Husbands, not Slaves, nor Menial Servants, and therefore are, in Decency, to be their Partners in their Fortunes. They will unavoidably partake of all their Troubles and Atflictions; and therefore it is but just, that they should share of their Felicities: A Husband cannot fall into Decay and Poverty, nor hardly any fort of Calamity, but he will certainly have his

Wife paral And but Fort what Mat that worl ever conv hap mak he e as u

> 1 eno of t live the dea wh Qu the of tha int the no

> > liv

ve

nà

Su

Wife

Wife involv'd therein with him; they are infeparable Companions in Mifery and Misfortune: And therefore what can make amends for this, but the Certainty of partaking in all their good Fortune also? Neither is this any more, than what is expresly promis'd and agreed to in the Matrimonial Contract, by which it is provided, that the Wife is endowed with all the Husband's worldly Goods; that is, she is to have the use of every thing belonging to him, that is necessary, convenient, and delightful; to be as easy and as happy, as his worldly State and Condition can make her. She bargains for it upon her part, and he engages for it upon his, and is unjust, as well as unkind, if he deny it.

ted in

er and fit for

, it is

itution

n had

of the

Flood,

d yet,

eft oc-

t the

ateve

wards

l it to

fo the

bands aking

hem:

tners,

ition,

o the

mpa-

lenial

o be

l un-

Af-

they

can-

any

e his

Vite

it.

Neither is this Care to end here; it is not enough to let them partake of all the Bleffings of this World in common with them, whilst they live together; but it must also extend it self to the providing for them, after they themselves are dead, if they furvive; and that according to what is feemly and becoming, according to the Quality and Condition they have lived in (if there be Ability) and according to the Customs of the Place. It is indecent, as well as hard, that they should fall from Plenty and Esteem, into a State of Poverty and Vileness. therefore, the churlish and ill-temper'd Men are not only to blame, who deny their Wives, whilst living with them, what is handsome and convenient for them; but even the kindest and best natur'd Men alive, who take no care of their Support and Maintenance, in case they overlive S 3 them:

them: These are properly the bad Husbands, who, by their Folly and Profuseness, or by Neglect and Idleness, by Gaming, or Intemperance, or other evil Courses, leave them (as they call it) to the wide World, expose them naked, and unprovided, to Want and Misery, and great Calamities.

Men will in vain pretend to Love and Kindness that are careless in this Particular, and make not a reasonable Provision for their Widowhood, as they are able; but rather choose to live at large, and leave them destitute and helpless; as if the Sorrows of their folitary State were not fufficient. Where neither Men's Estate, Calling, nor Industry can competently furnish them with Maintenance, it is excufable, though pitiable: But where it proceeds from Carelessness and Negligence, from Wastfulness and Ill-husbandry, or from any Cause and Occasion, in a Man's Power to hinder and prevent; there, the not making due Provision for their Maintenance and Ease, is both indecent, and unkind, and most exceedingly blameable. A true and virtuous Love will shew it felf in outward kind Effects, as well as in the inward Movings of the Heart: And they, who are the Parties most concern'd, must be able to witness their being well belov'd, by such good Fruits and Confequences as that kind Paffion usually produces; one of which, is certainly a due regard to the Relation, and Affection, the Quality and Condition of Wives, whilft they liv'd with them, and a proportionable Maintenance for them.

These are the three Particulars, in which the Husbands are to shew the Love which God com-

mands

mane

affe &

and

cent

live

cord

then

Nei

to 1

of t

are

who

one

fee

Go

con

hin

Re

av

wi

im

at

fed

th

ea

M

ar

bo

F

b

11

, who, Ct and other to the vided, dness, e not d, as arge, f the cient. ndus-Tain-But egli-, or nover king , is ngly lew the are vitnits roird nd m,

he

nds

mands them to their Wives. They are to be kindly affection'd to their Persons; they are to be true and faithful to them, and to maintain them decently and handfomly in all respects, whilst they live with them; and to take all due care, according to their Condition and Ability, to leave them eafy, when themselves are dead and gone. Neither is the Duty of the Relation of Husbands to be fufficiently discharg'd, by any one or two of these Particulars, but by all together: They are indeed fo chain'd and knit together, that whoever, upon good Principles, observes to fulfil one, will feldom fail of discharging all: He will fee the fame Reafon, and the fame Command of God, for all, as much as one. And whofoever confiders Matters ferioufly, and intends to fhew himself a sober, virtuous, and religious Man, in this Relation of a Husband, and does not marry with a wild and fenfual, heedlefs, inconfiderate Spirit, will certainly oblige himself to take all care imaginable to make a wife and prudent Choice at first, such as may laudably engage his Affections, and as reasonably retain them; for when that Point is well fettled, the rest will follow eafily, and not without it. Affection will engage Men to Fidelity, and make them duly careful and follicitous of making fit Provision for them, both in Life and Death. And truly, without this Foundation, it will be very hard for any Hulbands to comply with St. Paul's Advice, to love their Wives; or with the other part of it, in the words of the Text, not to be bitter against them;

which are in the last place to be considered, and that in a few words.

The Phrase seems to be taken from the Offence and Disgust that bitter things give when tasted, and not liked. And the Advice is, that Husbands should not, by a peevish and morose, a churlish and ill-natur'd Carriage, make themselves as uneasy and unagreeable to their Wives, as bitter things are distastful to the Palate; or, that they should not be provok'd to Anger and Distast, and hard unkind Words or Actions, by the Failings, Heedlessness, and Impersections of their Wives; as the Palate or Stomach is provok'd to disgust and loathing, by the Taste of any thing very bitter. In short, they are to use, neither in Word nor Deed, any Ungentleness, or Rigour towards them.

There is a Bitterness of Language that every one understands, and Words that wound to the quick; and, as the Pfalmist says, are very Swords: But that, which gives them usually their Point and Edge, is the Confideration of the Person that speaks, and the Relation he stands in to us: The Words of Strangers, weak or ignorant, though never to bad, are in a manner idle, and affect us little: The Words of a malicious Adversary make no very deep Impression, because we commonly expect no better from him: But the hard Words of Friends and Neighbours, Acquaintance and Relations, occasion us Grief and great Con-The ill Usage of others stirs us to Anger and Indignation, but 'tis against them; but the ill Usage we receive at the Hands of those we love, love, cafio easin tion cafic belo wol ther vou defi con me cor thi fo lit ot ce V th

> b a c t

d, and

offence tasted

Hus.

ofe, a

felves

es, as

or,

r and

s, by

ons of

vok'd

thing

er in

gour

very

the

rds:

and that

The

ugh

tus

ary

m-

ard

nce

onger

he

ve e,

love, and from whom we look'd not for it, occasions Sadness and much Trouble, Pain and Uneasiness within. It is the Defeat of our Expectation and Defire that hurts us most, on these occasions: We know we love, and we would be belov'd; we try to oblige by all means, and we would be again oblig'd in our turn; we favour them, and would be recommended to their Fayour; and, failing of these Returns, expected and defired by us, we are the more afflicted and difconsolate. Our Concern, under any Disappointment, is still proportion'd to the Hopes we had conceiv'd of another kind of Event. It is upon this account, that harsh and bitter Words become fo grievous to near Relations, because they are so little look'd for and expected; the Mind is full of other Hopes, and is surpriz'd to find them so deceiv'd: This, of all other things, makes bitter Words from Husbands to afflicting to the Wives; they are in Reason and Nature to look for all Forbearance, Gentleness and Patience, for Affability and Condescension, and every thing that can proceed from Confideration and Good-nature; and they meet with all the contrary, Moroseness, Peevilhness, Impatience, no Allowances, Clamour, Revilings, and ungenerous Upbraidings: And this, to foft and tender Dispositions, is a cruel and afflicting Usage, sits heavy on the Mind, and wounds the Heart most sensibly; makes them pass their Hours uncomfortably, and oftimes ends their Life in Sorrow.

And upon these accounts this Bitterness is forbidden; it is truly unmanly and unjust, and becoming

coming neither a religious nor a reasonable Crea-We are oblig'd to make the Life of every one as easy and delightful as we can; and therefore are commanded to be as kind and good to all the World as possibly we can, consistently with the promoting and fecuring of our own Ease and Happiness, and that of those who are related to us in nearer or remoter degree; and therefore are most strictly tied to do nothing cruel and unjust to any one: And therefore, when we make those miserable, whom God and Nature hath oblig'd us to make eafy and happy, altho' it be by Words only, we are highly to blame; for if a little Matter will do the same Hurt to one, which a great one will but do to another, we are as much oblig'd to abstain from the small, as from the great Offence: And if the Bitterness of Words be so grievous to tender and good-natur'd People, it is because the kindest and most gentle Language is their due; they have a Right to look for it, which should not be defeated: And whosoever shall confider to what extraordinary Difficulties and Sufferings God, by his Order and Appointment, hath most unavoidably subjected and exposed the Women above Men, as well by their own natural Frame and Make, as by a great many fad, but usual Accidents, will see himself oblig'd in common Pity to deal gently with them, to help, by Patience and Forbearance, to make their Burthen lighter, and to sustain them under their Infirmities.

There is also a being bitter that is carried beyoud Words, and proceeds to personal Outrage, Violence, and Hurt; a thing unworthy any good and Ne left ner Thank the

and

Gi ple to Bu

> co an is be

Sl

pr pi in D L

w de bi

fe

S

ı

rea-

ery

ere-

l to

rith

and

to

are

just

ofe

lus

rds

at-

eat

uch

eat

10

t is

e is

ich

iall

ind

nt,

the

tu-

out

ni-

by

nen

es.

e-

ge,

od nd

and honest Man, nor justifiable, without a great Necessity, betwixt a Master and his Slave, much less to be endur'd from any Husband to his Partner and Companion, who is of equal Dignity. This Practice, truly villainous, was of fo ill Sound and Fame, so very unbecoming the Relation, that the Civil Laws did, in some Cases, allow it a just Ground for a Divorce; and, indeed, when People (at least of any Education, or Fashion) come to that pass, they seem not fit to live together: But yet when they cease to be Friends and kind Companions, they do not prefently become Slaves.

I have now done with the Duty of Husbands, contain'd in this Command, to love their Wives, and not be bitter against them: In which, there is nothing but what is very reasonable and fit to be complied withal by every good and honest Man; nothing but what will truly tend to the procuring and promoting his own Peace and Happinels, and to the Comfort of his Life. And lo, indeed, it is, with the Discharge of every other Duty: We vainly feek for Eafe and Happiness in Liberty, and Disengagement from our Duties; whereas, to fober and confidering Minds, 'tis evident, that as this World is ordered, it is impossible to be at ease, but by a faithful due Discharge of all the feveral Obligations laid upon us by the feveral Relations we contract to one another. When we cease to be good Fathers and good Sons, good Subjects and good Husbands, good Mafters and good Servants; how can we possibly be happy? Whom shall we love and honour, and

by whom shall we be lov'd and honour'd? Whom shall we gratify and ferve, by whom shall we be gratified and ferv'd? Whilst we are fociable Creatures, we must have all the focial Virtues; we can receive no Duty whilst we pay none. And though, when all is done, we shall never be very happy in this World of Mifery; yet we shall never be fo, in any tolerable measure and degree, without a good Intention, and a hearty reasonable Endeavour to discharge with Faithfulness and Care the feveral Duties that we owe to all the World; and which is truly the End and Purpose for which we are fent into it, and continued in it; and of which we shall, one Day, give a strict Account to God, and shall receive a Reward or Punishment, according to our Diligence, or our Neglect of the Performance of those Duties.

DISCOURSE XIV.

hom re be

Crea-

And

very

l ne-

ree,

ona-

and

the

oofe d in

trict

dar

our

COLOSSIANS III. VERSES 22, 23, 24.

Servants, obey in all things your Masters according to the Flesh; not with Eye-service, as Men-pleasers, but in Singleness of Heart, fearing God: And what soever you do, do it heartily, as unto the Lord, and not unto Men: Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the Reward of the Inheritance; for ye serve the Lord Christ.

THESE Words do plainly contain in them, First, A Command to Servants to obey their Masters according to the Flesh, in all things. Secondly, A Caution about the Manner of performing their Duty, and the End they should propose to themselves in doing it: They should not ferve with Eye-service, as Men-pleasers, but in Singleness of Heart, fearing God; and whatever they did, they should do it heartily, as unto the Lord; and not unto Men. They should not only serve their Masters well, whilst their Hand and Eye was over them, as if the pleasing them were the only thing they aimed at; but they frould always be exactly diligent and faithful in their Service, whether their Masters were absent or present, and could discover them or no; they should be, indeed, at all times, and on all occasions, as honest and as careful in their Master's Business, as they would appear to others, and to them, whilst looking on them. They should obey in Singleness of Heart, serve sincerely, and without Dissimulation;

270 Duty of Servants to Masters.

tion; fearing God, looking up to him, and knowing they are always in his Sight; and whatever they do, they should do it as to the Lord; as obeying Him, and defirous of making themselves acceptable to Him, as well as to Men, either their Masters or others. Thirdly, Here is the Reason, Ground and Foundation of the Servants paying all Obedience, and due Service to their Mafters, and of their doing it to the Lord, or in Obedience to the Lord; Knowing that of the Lord, ye shall receive the Reward of the Inheritance, for ye serve The Service and Obedience of the Lord Christ. Servants shall not go unrewarded in the other World, however it fare with them in this; and therefore there is no want of a sufficient Encouragement of their Faithfulness and Diligence; they shall receive the Reward of Inheritance; they shall be treated in Heaven as God's Children: And this Reward they shall receive of the Lord, and therefore there is need of looking up to him, and fearing him, and accounting him their Sovereign Master, for they serve the Lord Christ. Their Earthly Masters, or Masters according to the Flesh, may overlook, neglect, or evilly intreat their utmost Labours, Care and Honesty; but Christ their Heavenly Master, whose they are, and whom they serve, will not so use them; but seeing from above their faithful, diligent, and honest Labours in their Masters Service, will most unquestionably deal with them as good and honest Servants, and cause them, in due time, to enter into the Joy of their Lord. So St. Paul expresses the same thing, in Ephes. 6.8. Knowing that what-COEVER foeve receive these

> all th obey exte and all 1 Wiv thin a R fter ed i Ref fore nev wa Re ma fro the

> > ing Ex tic

fide

be

th

Joever good thing any Man doth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether he be bond or free. Of

these things in their order.

W-

ver

ey-

ac-

eir

on,

ng

rs,

ce

all

ve

of

er

d

1-

ey

ĺ

is

d

n

e

t

And, First, of the Command; Servants, obey in all things your Masters, according to the Flesh. To obey in all things, is a Command of very great extent, and repeated in the like Terms, Titus 2.9. and fo the Children are to obey their Parents in all things, in ver. 20. of this Chapter; and the Wives are to be subject to their Husbands in every thing, Eph. 5. 24. And yet you may take it for a Rule, that neither Father, Husband, nor Mafter, nor any Superiour whatfoever, is to be obeyed in all things: Obedience, without Restriction or Referve, belongs to no mortal Man: And therefore, let Commands be never fo express and full, never fo general and extensive, there will be always room, and necessity for Limitations and Restrictions, arising from the Reason of the Command, and the Nature of the subject Matter, from the positive Command of God, and from the Laws of the Kingdom, or some other Confideration not to be omitted. And tho', in speaking to the other Relations, I have confidered these Exceptions; yet it will not be amiss to take notice here also, in what Particulars neither Masters can require, nor Servants owe, or ought to pay Obedience.

And, First, the Laws of God are certainly to be preferr'd to all the Commands of Masters, Mistresses, and all Superiours: If God command one thing to be done, and prohibit the doing another, no Master can dispense with his Servant's neglect-

272 Duty of Servants to Masters.

ing the Command, or venturing on the Prohibition: The Servant is there to obey God rather than

his Master.

And so it is, Secondly, with the Laws of the Land; they also are to be preferr'd to all the Commands of Masters and Superiours, because they are above them, and were before them. Even in things not naturally dishonest and immoral, but fuch as it would be innocent and lawful to do, if they were not actually forbidden by Law; even in fuch things as these, a Servant is not to obey his Master, because he has not Power to do those things himself, nor Power to bid ano-The Laws of the Land are fupether do them. riour to all Masters, and are always presum'd to enact upon Reason and good Grounds; and therefore, though Servants are to obey in all things, yet it is only in all things where they are at liberty to obey, by either the Laws of God, or by the Laws of the Land: For the Good of the Community, (which is prefum'd to be confider'd and confulted in all Laws, whether it be, or no) being greater and superiour to the Good of Servants obeying their Masters, it is but reasonable the Laws should be considered and obeyed, rather than any private Orders of a Master, though what is order'd to be done were otherwise innocent and lawful to be done, if it had not been prohibited. This puts it past all doubt, that a Servant never must obey his Master commanding him any thing immoral, or against any positive Law of God. Thus if a Master take his Servant out with him, and order him to fet upon another, and

and to Comr rity to must or Co Serva and h Injur than a his Se his Se to G from Orde toGo virtu How can I Maft fame God no r oblig his c

> desp of a Infe

> to h
> I
> ulef

to t

exci

ibi-

han

the

the

ule

em.

no-

ful

by

not

to

10-

pe-

to

re-

gs, li-

by

he

r'd

0)

er-

ole

2-

gh

0-

en

2

ıg

ve

nt

r,

d

and take away either his Money or his Life, his Command is to go for nothing; he has no Authority to lay fuch a Command upon his Servant, nor must any Servant pay Obedience to such Orders or Commands. The Obligations that all People, Servants as well as Masters, lie under to be just and honest, and do no Hurt or Violence, or lesser Injury to any one, are antecedent to, and greater than any Obligations that a Master can lay upon his Servant; and therefore, 'till a Master can set his Servant at liberty from the Obedience he owes to God's Laws, positive or moral, and free him from the Penalties of Disobedience, he can lay no Orders of his own upon the Servant contradictory to God's. The Servant must say with himself, what virtuous Foseph said under a great Temptation, How can I do this thing, and fin against God? How can I possibly comply with such a Command of my Master's, to be unjust or wicked, and know at the fame time I am forbidden by God the doing it? God is the Master of us all, and with him there is no respect of Persons; bond or free are alike oblig'd to obey his Laws, and no Power less than his own can dispense with any one neglecting or despising them; and much less will the Command of a Superiour here on Earth excuse a Servant, or Inferiour, offending against God in pure Obedience to his Master.

The Authority of Masters over Servants is very useful to the Good and Order of Mankind, and to the Welfare of the World; and accounted so reasonable, that a great many small Offences are excus'd in Servants, under Authority, and acting

274 Duty of Servants to Masters.

by Command, because they are under some Constraint and Awe, and because a great many Inconveniencies would follow upon the scrupulous Dil pute of Servants, weighing and examining the Orders and Injunctions of their Masters. But this can only be understood in Things indifferent, or in Matters wholly above the Capacity of Servants: In all fuch Cases Submission and Obedience best becomes them; but where the Case is plain and evident, and the Execution of the Command muft certainly be hurtful to them, as opposing some Command of God, there they must needs dispute and disobey: There no Body excuses them for acting by Authority, for no one has Authority against Justice, Honesty or Truth; and there is no Capacity too mean to understand their moral Duties, that is sufficient to deliberate, and to execute Defigns that overthrow them.

But neither are all Servants alike oblig'd to obey their Masters in all things, though innocent and lawful, or indifferent; because that all are not alike Servants. The State of Servitude is very different in one Country, from what it is in another; and in the same Country it is differenced by the Variety of Contracts and Agreements: And the Duty and Obedience of Servants is to be measur'd by those Contracts, and those different Customs. And therefore, when St. Paul exhorts the Colossian and Ephesian Servants to obey their Masters in all things; if some of them were Captives and downright Slaves, and others only Servants by Agreement, and hired out themselves to labour in their Calling for such and such Advantabour in their Calling for such and such Advantabour in their Calling for such and such Advantabour

gently
do, o
prome
obey
Mine
the Chy
thith
do
nor
the Chy
thith
do
nor
they
ts
St. H
dage
char

Cho

in fu

tages

Term

be pr

exhor

iters;

hereb

but fa

ies,

Servi

fay,

lad C

can, l

hired

Obey

Contr

Con-

ncon-

S Dif.

g the

t this

t, or

ants:

beft

1 and

muft

fome

dif-

hem

ority

ere is

noral

exe-

d to

cent

not

very

1110-

d by

And

be

rent

orts

beir

ap-

Ser-

sto

ran-

tages of Wages and Protection, and upon certain Terms; though both these forts of People might be properly call'd Servants by St. Paul, and both exhorted to perform the Duty of Servants to Mafters; yet were it evident, that St. Paul did not hereby make the State of their Servitude alike, but faid the fame Words to them, in different Senfes, according to the different Condition of their Servitude. To the Slaves and Captives he would fay, Obey your Masters in all things, as becomes your lad Condition, and make your Chains as easy as you can, by your Compliance and Submission: But to the hired Servants he would be understood to fay, Obey your Masters in all things, according to your Contract and Agreement; behave your felves as diligently and faithfully, as you have promised them to do, or by the Custom of the Place are presum'd to have promised them: He might exhort the Slaves to obey their Mafters even at the Oar, and in the Mines; but 'twere not reasonable to think he should thereby exhort the hired Servants to submit to be fent under-ground, or to the Labour of the Gallies, if their Masters should command them thither. Neither the Customs of the Country, nor the Contract gave the Masters any such Authority over the hired Servants; and therefore they owe no fuch Submiffion or Obedience. And St. Paul does not bring them into any new Bondage; but exhorts and commands them to difcharge the Duty that they owe, by vertue of their Choice and Undertaking, to serve their Masters in such a Capacity, on such Condition.

Iţ

It is therefore evident, that Respect must needs be had to the different State of Servitude of different People, to know in what Particulars a Servant is at liberty from complying with fome Commands of Masters, that yet are innocent and lawful enough in themselves. Now, if upon suppofal of these different fort of Servants, either at Ephesus, or at Coloss, the Exhortation must be differently understood, with respect to each of them; 'tis plain it must be also understood according to the Usages and Contracts of all the different Countries of the World: For here is no new Servitude induc'd, nor old one abrogated, but Servants are left by Christianity just in the State it found them; their Condition is not at all alter'd; but not for the worse to be sure. And if this were well confidered in the higher Instances of Princes and Subjects, as well as in those of Masters and Servants, a great many weak and undue Inferences and Arguments from the State of Fewill or Roman Government and Subjection, to that of other free and brave Nations, had been avoided, which only ferve to perplex well-meaning People. But that which I would chiefly show hereby, is this, that all Servants, not being alike Servants but of different forts and degrees, are not alike oblig'd to obey their Masters in all things, but are at liberty in some Particulars, according to their Contracts and Agreements; and are therefore only oblig'd to ferve and obey their Masters in all Particulars, wherein they have engag'd to pay them Service and Obedience, either exprefly, or implicitly, by the Nature of their Undertaking

and E Conc only ing t

to d Stati anfw fil th Serv Con Cau perfe prop Terve Sing ever muf vant hone they forn bot fhal gen fequ cipl Co the nef tion

Sul

and

and

and Employment. And that being the Case and Condition of all Christian Servants with us, is the only Cafe that is to be confidered by us, in fpeak-

ing to the Duty of Servants.

needs

dif-

Ser-

Com-

law-

ppo-

er at

st be

ch of

cord-

erent

Ser-

Ser-

te it

er'd;

this

es of

Ma-

ndue

wish

at of

ded,

ople.

, 15

rants

like

but

g to

ere-

sters

d to

efly,

king and

Every Servant is therefore commanded by God to discharge the Duty and Service which his Station or Agreement require of him; he must answer the End of his being entertain'd, and fulfil the Conditions upon which he is admitted to Service. This is the Substance and Matter of the Command. The 2d Thing to be confidered, is the Caution adjoin'd about the Way and Manner of performing their Service, and the End they should propose to themselves in doing it: They should not serve with Eye-service, as Men-tleasers, but in Singleness of Heart, fearing God; and doing whatever they did, not as to Men, but as to God. They must not only appear to be good and careful Servants by being diligent, and feeming very just and honest, whilst their Masters are in fight, or when they are fure it will reach their Ears by others Information; but they must be indeed always so, both in their Absence, and when 'tis likely they thall never hear or know they are indeed to diligent and honest, but by the good Effects and Confequences: They must be so upon religious Principles, because it is their Duty, both by God's Commandment, and their own Engagement; they are tied by both to serve diligently and honestly, in Singleness of Heart, without Dissimulation and Hypocrify: They must be, in Truth and Substance, as good Servants as they would shew and appear to be to Strangers, or their Masters,

fearing God. They stand continually in God's Sight, although not always in their Master's Eye; and they should set his Fear before them, who sees them constantly, and knows most certainly, whether they are as diligent and honest in their Master's Ignorance and Absence, as when he stands by, and fees them doing Service. Whatever they do, they should endeavour to approve themselves to God, by doing it in fuch a manner, that is, by being fo diligent and honest in their Service, as that God shall certainly approve them, whether Men do or no. A Master may be pleas'd, because he is deceiv'd with Eye-fervice, and with a feeming Diligence and Honesty; but God is not so pleas'd, because he is not to be so deceiv'd; but knows the Heart, and fees the Falshood at the And when a Servant pleases God, (as all do that are just and faithful, diligent and careful in their Business) they seldom fail of pleasing They may, by some Misfortune, or Mistake, or by Perversenels, fail of pleasing Men, even when they please God; but then they have the Satisfaction of knowing they design'd to please Men, and took the likeliest Course to do it. For Servants are not here forbidden Eye-fervice, and pleasing Men, as it imports the doing well and carefully under the Master's Eye, and whilst he is in fight, for that is but reasonable and their Duty; but they are forbidden the being only Eye-fervants, and the endeavouring to please their Masters whilst they are in fight: And are commanded to behave themselves as well, to be as diligent and just and true, at all times, as in their Master's Presence; Ang

And i he wo and h all tir him, alway reafo Bulin vant becar recol his V then is hi to hi Abfe vice men Wa him that non and the due fold 25 1 W for

his

ha

tile

And if a Servant would but take that for his Rule, he would hardly ever fail of pleafing both God and his Mafter; be but as diligent and honest at all times, as his Master sees he is whilst he is with him, and as he would have his Master believe he always is. This would prevent all Sloth, and unreasonable Wast of Time, and all Neglect of Business, and all Deceit, and secret Thefts. A Servant never cares to appear flothful to his Master, because he knows it is a Quality that will never recommend him, and therefore chooses to exert his Vigour and Activity while he is by: He knows then what it is will please him, and what it is that is his Duty; and therefore he ought, according to his Strength and Abilities, to be as active in his Ablence. A Servant, when he enters into Service, gives up his Time and Labour, by Agreement, to his Master, in consideration of what Wages, Keeping, and Protection he expects from him: And therefore he would be unjust to wast that Time, and spare that Labour, that is truly none of his; they are his Master's by his Contract, and his Master ought to have the Advantage of them: It is defrauding People of what is their due; it is keeping back part of what is already lold them, and agreed for; and it would be full as just for a Master to detain part of his Servant's Wages, contracted for, at the Year's end, as it is for a Servant to wast a great deal of that Time, and spare a great deal of that Labour, that was his Master's by Agreement: Because a Servant has no more Right to his Master's Money, than the Master has Right to his Servant's Time and Labour;

Fye; fees whe-Ma-

they lves by

her ule em-

fo but the

(as

ing lilen, ve

ife or

nd nd

is

S, ft

d

Labour; the one does not stand to his Bargain and therefore, and thereby, he fets the other at his Justice is the rendring to all Men what is their due, and Injustice the detaining from any one what is their due.

Now whatever is due by Contract and Agree. ment from one Party to another, is generally due upon fulfilling fuch Terms and Conditions; and if one Party fulfill the Terms and Conditions propos'd by the other, he has a Right to all that is promis'd and engag'd for on those Terms, and the other is unjust if he deny it. This makes it evident, that if a Servant contract with a Master to give him all his Time and Labour, for fuch a space of Days or Weeks, or Months, or Years, and be as good as his Word, and stand to his Bargain; he has an undoubted Right to whatever Wages or Advantage his Master agreed to let him have, and his Master would be a very wicked and unjust Man to deny him it; because he earn'd it, and deferv'd it, and it was his due by Contract and Agreement. This is evident on the Servants fide; but then it is as evident on the other hand, that the Servant will have no more Right to his Master's Promise and Engagement, than he gains by performing the Conditions on which that Promise and Engagement stand; and that the Master would not be unjust or wicked in refuling to pay him the full, in case it were fully prov'd, that he had not given that Time and Labour to his Service that he ought. is but Justice; and if the Laws do not allow or countenance such Defalcations, and Detentions,

it i

fo n

ters

the wit

fpa

for

chi

no

ing

by

W th

ha

te

V

gain

at his

what

n any

gree-

due!

and

tions

that

and

es it

after ich a

ears,

Bar-

ever

let ked

rn'd

Conthe

thě

ore

ent,

on

and

ted

ere

me his

01

ns,

it is, because they suppose and put the Servant fo much into the Hands and Power of their Mafters, that they may make, and fee them fulfill their Contracts; and they are prefum'd to bear with, and indulge fuch wast of Time, and fparing of Labour, as would have been fufficient for their Business; and they must bear the Mischiefs and Inconveniencies, which they would not, tho' they might, prevent, either by constraining them to labour and perform their Duty, or by difmiffing them, and having no more to do with them. It is not fit the Law should make the Masters Judges, whether the Servants shall have their Wages contracted for, when the Mafters were at liberty to contract, and might fee whether the Servants could deferve them; and, in great measure, make them earn them. But yet the Servants cannot help feeing, that it would be but just and reasonable for the Masters to deny them part of their Wages, if they denied, and wrong'd their Masters of that Time and Labour to which their Wages were only due. And therefore idle and flothful Servants know they are unjust and false to their Agreement, when they mis-spend their Masters Time, and give him not that Labour which they owe his Service.

And that they may not be to feek, or troubled with much Scruples and Uncertainty, about the space and proportion of Time and Labour to be bestowed upon the Masters Service, let them consider a little, what they do in Eye-service, and when they would please Men: And though it would not be reasonable to expect they

hould

should continually exert such Vigour and Activity on all Occasions, as they do when they would shew themselves to best Advantage; yet it were sit to mend their pace, although they made some tolerable Abatements: They know very well, there is a difference betwixt the Extremities of Slothfulness, and the Quickness of Eye-service; and that the middle way between them is most reasonable, and would fuffice. A moderate and continued Labour has Advantages that Servants do not always think on; it makes their necessary Service, in time, grow easy to them: It is so in all other Cases; continued and repeated Acts beget Habits, and things habitual become easy and familiar to us; and conftant and continued Labours do the like, if done with any fort of Moderation. When Strength and Pains are duly and discreetly proportion'd out, they beget a fort of Activity in People, that will not long bear Reft and Idleness, but puts them upon Labour and Employment: And therefore it is truly for the Ease and Interest of Servants to bestir themselves, as well as to the Profit of their Masters, and the Discharge of their own Duties to them. It makes their Pains and Labour grow, in time, easy and well to be endur'd by them, and begets in them fuch an habitual Activity, as will in good time stand them in great stead, when they come to be at liberty, and at their own disposal. Then they will fee and feel the Benefit of having been good Servants; they will reap the Fruits of all that Induftry, and Care, and Labour, which they exercis'd in the Service of their Masters; i. e. they will

will ous by ters

ist

gre fer Th and wi

> Ap lab exbe

the

Re

the fo

th an th bi

al

a

N

will now be industrious, careful, and laborious for themselves, and in their own Concerns, by having long been us'd to be so in their Masters. It will sometimes be otherwise; but this is the most natural and most usual Consequence.

ity

W

to

a-

sa

S,

he

e,

al-

e,

er l-

-

-

d

f

1

They, who have ferv'd their Masters with the greatest Industry and Diligence, will certainly ferve themselves the best, when they come to it: They will not only begin with greater Interest and better Credit, but, in all likelihood, they will go on with more Success: There is all the Reason in the World to think they should: That Application of Mind, and Disposition of Body to labour and take pains, which they have long exercis'd, will not now forfake them, but rather be increas'd and rais'd by the Confideration that the Fruits of them will now be gathered by themselves, and come home. The Desire of thriving and fucceeding in their Callings, is not fo fure and near a way to the doing fo, as the being laborious and industrious in them is; for the Defire of thriving can only quicken Men, and put them upon Industry and Labour; it shews them the Means that are necessary to that End, but they may still know this, and still defire, without obtaining it; whereas the Men, that are already both industrious and laborious, seldom want the Defire of fucceeding, and find they are already in the right way: This partly gives account why many Servants, when they become Masters, succeed so ill, notwithstanding their Defires and Aims of growing rich, and thriving, because they have not us'd themselves to Industry and

and Labour, and cannot take those pains that are truly necessary to the doing well. They may have Skill and Artifice enough, and may be frugal and good Husbands; but those Things will not do, without great Industry and Labour in their feveral ways; which will not come when they are call'd for, and found necessary, but must have been laid up before by Use and Custom: Experience therefore teaches this, as well as Reafon, that the better Servants any People are to their Masters, the better they will certainly succeed, when they come to manage their own Concerns: And one would think, this very Confideration should prevail with young People to be as careful and industrious as they well can, whilft with their Masters, that they may find the Advantage of it in good time themselves.

There is an absolute Necessity of being careful, diligent, industrious and laborious, if Men have any Aim at living eafily and well, and thriving in the World; and these Qualifications are never to be attain'd by any one, but by Use and Custom, and being train'd up to them by a constant and continued Practice; which is to be begun when People are young, their Minds fusceptible of Impressions, and pliable to Heedfulness and Application, and their Limbs flexible to Labour: This is the Time and Season of makeing Industry and Labour habitual to them. the Care they take, and the Pains they are at, are truly for their own Service at the last; all the Skill and Understanding they get, is a Treasure for themselves: And if their Masters should per-

mit

mi

it

the

bu

the

E

re

th

fu

be

u

hat

ay

u-

rill

in

en

ust

n:

a-

to

IC-

vn

n-

be

Ift

d-

e-

n

d

15

y

0

e

mit them to continue ignorant and flothful, it would be fo much to their loss and mischief; they would not only ferve them much the worfe, but they would be fo much Sufferers themselves; they would lose their Time, and be unfit for their Employments: And therefore too indulgent and remiss Masters do never make good Servants, and they will never deferve to find them thankful for fuch Eafiness. For when the Servants come to be necessitated to Industry and Labour, by some unufual Urgencies, or by the Necessity of their Condition, they are perfectly to feek, and at a loss what to do. These are some of the Inconveniences of Eye-fervice, of Idleness and Sloth, and Wast of Time, which every Servant should do well to think on. They are injurious to themselves, make them incapable of answering the Designs of their Parents or Friends, in putting them to Trades and Callings, and of their own Defigns of living handsomely and fuitably to their Condition in the World; and occasion them, at the fame time, to be bad Servants, and to defraud their Masters of that Time and Labour which is truly due to them, and which they have agreed themselves to give them; and therefore they are false and unjust, when they deny or take them from them. And tho' the Masters have a Power, by Punishment and by Restraint, to make the Servants do their Duty and their Businefs, and do not exercise it on them, and might be therefore (as they are in Law) prefum'd to rest contented with what is done; yet ought not this to fatisfy the Conscience of the Servant,

who knows he is remifs and negligent in his Master's Concerns; for his Master is all the while deceiv'd, either believing his Business well done, when it is not; or knowing it is not done, when he might reasonably expect and require it should be done by the Servant; by either of which ways, the Servant is deceitful and unjust. And though the Mafter does not, or will not take notice of fuch Neglect, the Neglect and Offence is nevertheless in the Servant; he has not done his Duty, and he is bound to do better for the time to come: He was to do his Duty, not in Eye-service, but in Singleness of Heart, in all Sincerity, and fearing God, without regard had to what notice his Master might take of his Performances; but remembring what Obligations he lay under by his own Contract or Agreement, and knowing that he was evermore in God's fight, who is the God of Justice, and who loves Truth and Sincerity. And there is nothing more likely both to make and keep Servants good and careful, than to confider that God commands them to be fo, and will take account whether or no they are fo. And therefore, it fignifies little to diffemble with Mafters, and pay them with Eyefervice, when God discerns and sees their Deceit and Falshood, knows their Hypocrify and counterfeiting Care and Diligence, when at the Bottom they are truly negligent and careless of their Mafters Bufinels.

It would not be true, to tell them that every Fit of Idleness and Sloth were faulty before God, and that all Loss of Time were finful; for it is

not

no

Bu

to

lea

cei

th

an

an

fu

in

er

be

be

it

b

S

his

iile

ne,

len

ild

ich

nd

ke

ce

ne

he

in

n-

o

r-

ie

t,

1

not fo, fomething of that kind is unavoidable: But they must needs indulge as little as possible to them; it will in time become a Fault, and lead to Sin, that, feldom practis'd, may be innocent enough; and no way better to prevent it. than remembring, that in the main their Industry and Diligence, and Labours are contracted for, and hired out; and that too great a Wast and Confumption of Time, either in Negligence, or minding other matters than they should, is so much Lofs and Injury to those, whose Business should employ and take it up. This Principle should be fettled in the Minds of Servants; but it should be in general, and without scruple, so as the Mind should not be made too nice and tender by it; but so as to quicken them to make amends, by new and greater Care and Diligence at one time, for what is wanting at another, by the Surprise of Sloth, and Fits of Liftlefness; that, in the whole, they may be fatisfied that they have done no Injury, but will discharge the Duty of their Office, and the Trust they undertook. This is also the Case, in great measure, of the hired Servants; as well as of those of the better fort, who are also Servants, buttied with other Bonds. These ought to know, because they are not always young, and heedless, but of Years, Staidness and Experience: They know, or ought to know, that all the Time and Labour that is due to the Discharge of what they undertake, is certainly theirs, who pay them for it; and therefore are oblig'd in Reason and Justice to give it them. Neither do they want Encouragements to excite

Credit and good Fame; and nothing gives it, or fecures it, like the being diligent and careful, industrious and laborious in their Service. This appears even by Eye-service, which gets them the good Name they seek for, and by which they live, till they are laid open and discovered: The Appearance even of Care and Industry is profitable to them; and therefore, to be sure, the Thing it self would serve them most effectually, and recommend them to such Favour and Good-liking

as they want in their Condition.

And let them also add to all these natural Rewards, the Hopes of pleafing God by fuch their conscientious Industry and Labour, and they will want no more Encouragement to set about it; and that is certainly the Truth of the matter: The Promises of God's Favour here, and, in due time, Rewards hereafter, are affix'd to the Difcharge of the Duty of Servants, as fully as they are to the Discharge of the Duty of any other Relation whatfoever, either Natural or Civil; they serve the Lord Christ, and are advis'd to do what they do, as to the Lord; knowing that of the Lord they shall receive the Keward of Inheritance. And this they would do well to keep in constant Memory; for this will amply recompence the greatest Labour, Care, and Industry that they can take. But of this I am to speak at large, when I have spoken to Truth and Faithfulness, and other good Qualities that are requir'd of Servants.

DIS

10

Ser

70

ar

ye

thin

Lav

to

mei

do,

and

Ser

felv

cer

pro

onl

the

me

Ke

WC

rig

bl

DISCOURSE XV.

t by

or in-

This

the

hey

The

ble

git

re-

ing

Reeir

ill

it;

er:

ue

if-

ey

er

il;

do

be

e.

ıt

le

y

n

d

So

COLOSSIANS III. VERSES 22, 23, 24.

Servants, obey in all things your Masters according to the Flesh; not with Eye-service, as Men-pleafers, but in Singleness of Heart, fearing God: And what soever you do, do it heartily, as unto the Lord, and not unto Men: Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the Reward of the Inheritance; for ye serve the Lord Christ.

Having shewn, that Servants were commanded by God to obey their Masters, in all things, where they were at liberty by his own Laws, and by the Laws of their Superiours; and to perform their feveral Contracts and Agreements, to discharge all that they undertook to do, with Care, and Diligence, and Faithfulness and Honesty; and to be in all Respects as good Servants, as they would fometimes shew themfelves, and appear to be to their Masters; knowing they were always in God's Sight, who will as certainly punish false and bad Servants, as he has promis'd to reward the good and faithful: Ihad only time to flew the Servants, that having given their Time and Labour to their Masters, by Agreement, for fo much Profit and Advantage, Wages, Keeping, and Protection, as they thought them worth, or they could get; they would be unrighteous and unjust to wast that Time, unprofitably, in Idleness and Sloth, and to be unreasonably sparing of that Labour, that were truly none of of theirs, but their Masters, who paid them for them; and added some few Motives farther to their Diligence and Industry, and Labour. I am now to proceed, and shew them, that they are also to discharge their Duty, and their Undertaking, with all Faithfulness and Honesty, with all the Truth and Justice in the World. They are hereby oblig'd to be as frugal and good Husbands for their Masters, as they can with Innocence and Honesty; and they are oblig'd to defraud them of

nothing.

First, Servants are oblig'd to be as frugal and good Husbands for their Masters, as they can with Innocence and Honesty, because they are to be every way as useful to them as is possible. This is the End and Intention of all Masters in entertaining Servants: They cannot do all things necessary themselves, therefore they trust others to do what is wanting; they cannot always be at home, and yet their Business must not be neglected: They cannot always be abroad, and yet their Business may require Attendance; therefore they entertain others to supply their Defects, that nothing may be wanting. But none of all these Ends are anfwered, where Faithfulness and Honesty are wanting: The Master's Absence is not at all supplied, where the Servant does not act as the Master would if he were present; and the Master stays at home to his Loss, if his Servant, he employs abroad, be false and faithless. It is therefore evident, that the very Reason of being entertain'd as a Servant, implies a faithful, just, and honest Mind, one that can be trusted with the Master's Concerns,

Conce permit when vantag and w he do

shoule No fonab fake, or W no m Maft others his N as he hone vices there mou felf 1 ges muf they coun Serv felv beca ther and

his

of

ble

Concerns, and transact in his behalf as far as he permits him to go. He is to represent his Master when absent, and to be as sollicitous for his Advantage, as 'tis presum'd he would himself be; and when he is not so, he fails in part of his Duty, he does not so well discharge his Trust as he should.

m for

ner to

Iam

y are

lerta-

th all

y are

pands

and

m of

and

can

o be

nis is

tain-

ffary

vhat

and

hey

ness

tain

may

an-

int-

ied,

fter

ays

oys

VI-

as

nest

er's

ns,

No Servant is to be unjust, or hard, or unreasonable in behalf of his Master; he is not, for his fake, to impose upon the Ignorance, Simplicity, or Want of Skill of those he deals with: He must no more think of recommending himself to his Master's Favour by over-reaching and deceiving others, than he must deceive or be unfaithful to his Master: He is bound to be as useful to him as he can; but he must continue innocent and honest himself, he must reconcile the being ferviceable to his Master with his own Good. And therefore, no Master must encourage such a Humour or Mistake in Servants, by shewing himfelf pleas'd, or content with any unjust Advantages they may have made in their Absence; but must give them leave to deal no otherwise than they would deal themselves: They must not countenance or cherish such Proceedings in their Servants, as they would be asham'd of in themfelves, and would not appear to have a hand in; because they encourage thereby Injustice in another, and by Connivance make it their own Act and Deed. And if a Servant be wife, he will, for his own fake, make his Master's Rule his Rule of demanding; for if that should be unreasonable, yet it is none of the Servant's Fault; he is U 2 nog

not guilty of the Hardship or Injustice, it is his Master's; whereas, if Servants take a Liberty to fet a higher Price than their own Masters set, who know their Business best, they may, as it may happen, draw an unnecessary Guilt upon their own Heads, and be unjust and exacting to their Mafters Profit, and their own Hazard: They mult therefore be as good Husbands for their Masters, as they can with Innocence and Honesty be; but no farther.

In the next place, a Servant is oblig'd to be as little wastful and profuse of his Master's Goods and Substance, as is possible: He is tied to do him all the Good he can, and therefore, to be fure, no Mischief: Now all Wast and Profusion unnecelfary is fo much Lofs and Damage, and therefore to be avoided; it is just so much Injury done to those who should be rather profited by them. And to keep themselves right in this matter, let them confider how they would behave themselves in Eye-service, and whilst trying to please Men. Let them, in the Absence of their Masters, behave themselves as carefully and frugally, as they would if they were prefent; or be as waftful and profuse under the Sight and Knowledge of their Masters, as they are when they are ignorant and absent, and they may take their Approbation for Consent. But to appear frugal and careful in their Mafters Sight, and in their Absence to be wastful and profuse, is not only Eye-service and Hypocrify, but Falshood and Injustice. 'Tis doing their Masters Mischief, whilst they believe they are well ferv'd. This is a Matter Servants are not lo much

mucl

well

defra

Subi

twix

sters

frau

fters

to n be;

Ma and

be 1

fort

Spi rea

tot W

tho

act all

No

ag the

an M

ho

pi

W F is his erty to t, who ty hapir own

ir May must lasters, but

be as Goods to him re, no necelrefore

one to them. , let

Men. , bethey I and

their and

n for their Aful

ypoheir

are ot fo

uch

much aware of as they should be: They think it well enough, if they do not directly and plainly defraud their Masters of their Money, or their Substance; whereas there is little difference betwixt a luxurious and profuse Wast of their Mafters Goods, which is not allow'd them, and defrauding them of fomething politively: The Mafters are fo much poorer, and are forc'd to be at fo much greater Charge, than they expected to be; the Servants allow themselves more than the Masters think they can, or should afford them, and the Masters pay for that Profusion; and if it be unreasonable, it does not want much of a civil fort of Theft. If, indeed, it be so, that a fordid Spirit will not make fuch Allowance as is fit and reasonable to be made, it will be innocent enough to take what is convenient, though it be reckon'd Wast and Profusion by incompetent Judges; though it were better to forfake fuch Service, than act against the Master's Will and Order: But in all fuch Cases, where there is no necessity of this Nature, Wast and Profusion are faulty, and against the Duty of good Servants; it is what they never think fit to discover, but dissemble and conceal; they know it is not pleafing to any Master, and consequently know it ought not to be done by them.

Lastly, All Servants are to be exactly just and honest, and neither to take away their Money, or their Goods, any farther than they are reasonably presum'd to allow them. It is of all Thests the worst, because it carries with it a Breach of Trust: From Violence and Fraud Men are to guard them-

U 3

felves

felves with Weapons, and their Wits; they are to look after themselves, they are threatned, and are bound to be aware, and wakeful. But neither of these sort of Robbers have engag'd especially to ferve you faithfully and truly, or to do you no Injury, and therefore you depend not on them; if they steal from you, they are only violent and unjust, they are not false and treacherous: Whereas the Servants, having given their Faith, their Promise and Engagement to be just and honest, are therefore trusted and employed by Masters; and therefore all their Thests are also Treacheries, and are aggravated by the Trust that is reposed in them. They are greater Villains than other People that steal more, because they have bound themselves to be exactly honest, and secure their Masters, to the best of their Abilities, from other People, and are the more confided in on that account.

If a Servant kill his Master, or a Wife her Husband, or a Priest his Bishop, it is not accounted by the Laws a simple Murther, but a fort of Treason, because these Parties owe Faith and Allegiance to the other: Their Crimes are rais'd proportionably to the Obligations they lay under to those Superiours, and their Cruelty as great and provoking, as the Trust and Confidence repos'd in such Relations was reasonable and just. It is much the same thing in lesser Instances; the Falshood and Persidiousness of Friends, Relations, and fuch as are entrusted, raises their Injustice to as great a height, as the Expectation of Faith and Honesty in them had been justly rais'd. And therefore, ness in gers; with !

again Le them their them the very ed i ly, 7 Rui no, wil out Fir der the the Pr all ha la 70

tl.

P

fore,

rs.

ey are

d, and

t nei-

espe-

to do

ot on

V 710-

20115:

aith,

ho-

Ma-

rea-

at is

han

lave

ure

om

hat

her

nt-

of

11-

s'd

er

at

e-

A.

le

s,

0

fore, upon this account, there is more Wickedness in the Thest of Servants, than in that of Strangers; because it is (as is evident) accompanied with Breach of Trust, Falshood and Treachery, against which there is no guard.

Let, therefore, Servants, who at any time find themselves under the Temptation of defrauding their Masters, Mistresses, or any else that trust them, confider but these few things: First, That the Practice they are about, is evidently in itself very wicked. Secondly, That it is yet more wicked in them, because they are entrusted. Thirdly, That a Discovery of it here, is like to be their And, Lastly, That, whether discover'd or no, it will lie as a Burthen on the Conscience, and will require Repentance and Satisfaction; or, without them, be forely punish'd and aveng'd by God. First, The Practice they are venturing on, is evidently in itself wicked: It is Injustice to take from their Master what is his, and appropriate it to themselves, who have no Right to it. The first Principle of common Honesty, and indeed of all humane Converse, is that which our Saviour hath laid down in St. Matth. 7. 12. having first laid it down in all Men's Hearts, What soever ye would that Men should do unto you, even so do to Now Theft is a manifest Violation of this Principle; it being certain, that no one can be willing that another should either take away, or detain from him what is his due, and to which the other has no right. In this especially consists the Pravity of Theft, as indeed of all other humane Acts, the doing that to another knowingly and

willingly, which he believes is grievous and injurious to him, and which he would think unrea. ionable to fuffer at the other's hands: For here the Man does Mischief to another, against his own Conscience; he defrauds his Neighbour of some. thing that he likes, and knows at the fame time he should not do so; which is an Offence against his Brother's Good, and against that Light that God hath plac'd in him, and every Man, to guide and direct his Practice by. So that whatever can make an Act wicked, is found in Stealing; and it is not a Sin only because it is forbidden by God; but it is forbidden by God, because it is directly a Sin against the Good and Quiet of Mankind, and would destroy all Right, and subvert the Order of the World. As little therefore as People think of it, whenever they invade another Man's Right, either privily or openly, by taking away his Substance or his Money, they are undermining and subverting the Foundation of every Man's Security, destroying mutual Trust and Confidence, injuring their Neighbour, finning against their own Conscience, and offending against both Divine and Humane Laws, and therefore needs must know that they do wickedly. Secondly, Servants, thus defrauding their Masters, are yet more wicked than other People doing the fame things, because they also betray a Trust, as I have before shewn They could not have an Opportunity of doing Mischief, but by the greatest Dissimulation and Treachery imaginable; they counterfeit July tice, Truth and Honesty, and other good Qualities, by which they come to be trusted and confided

fide are mu 10 1 But sho to ! or: a] Th up are 211 an W Q a P

I

l inju-

mrea-

re the

own forme.

time

that

uide

r can

God; ectly

and er of

k of ght,

ub-

and

ecu-

in-

nvn

and

OW

hus

ked

use

wn

of

on ul-

li-

oped fided in, and by this Trust and Confidence they are enabled to do Mischief, and do it. By how much the less such Villany is expected from them, fo much more villanous fuch Practice is in them: But of this before. The third Thing, Servants should consider, when under any Temptations to steal, either to satisfy their covetous Desires, or feed their Wantonness and Luxury, is this, that a Discovery of it here is like to be their Ruin. Their very Livelihood does oftentimes depend upon their Credit; their Faithfulness and Honesty are better to them, than their Hands and Feet; and all their Skill and Industry, their Strength and their Abilities would fignify little, if they were famed for false and unjust; their other good Qualities would make them more suspected and avoided, rather than recommend them to Employment, if People could not trust them.

Masters will bear with many defects of Skill and Diligence, where they are fure the Servants are exactly just and honest; but where they know them false and unjust, they will have no regard to Industry and Labour; because they must be always on the watch; they must be looking still, that what they get them by their Industry and Labour, they should not lose by their Thievery; they must be always on their guard against those, whose Bufinels it is to fecure them from those Fears. There is nothing so necessary to a Servant, as the Reputation of being just and honest; nothing more certain to undo them, to all intents and purposes, than a bad Fame, and the Suspicion of false dealing with the Masters; And therefore, if they acted

acted only upon prudential Confiderations, and confulted their own Benefit, they should of all things in the World be honest; when a Servant steals, he undermines the very Ground he stands upon; thinks he is only taking fomething from his Master, whilst he is taking away from himfelf the Means of his own Subliftence; for when his Frauds are once discover'd, he is absolutely ruined. It were therefore well, if fuch a Confideration as this were present to the Minds of Servants, under their Temptations to Injustice and Deceit: That there is all the danger in the World of a Discovery of their Thests, some time or other; and that whenever that is made, they shall, probably, be undone: And therefore, though their Wants and their Defires of what is none of theirs be very great and preffing, for the prefent, yet had they better go without it, even in point of Profit; because the Knowledge of such Fraud and Theft will quite disable them from ever making an Advantage more, by making them incapable of farther Service; for who will entertain a Thief and Villain? This is fo fure a Confequence of Falshood in a Servant; that they have nothing to depend upon, but the Hopes of lying conceal'd, and that their Thefts will never be discover'd; which Hopesare yet so often disappointed, that very few, who have for any time been guilty of this Practice, do altogether escape the notice of their Mafters: The Reputation of Servants is fo dear and valuable, that many Masters will not charge them downright with that Sin, who yet are well enough affur'd themselves, that they are guilty of

fee an lic th

an va vii Pr

th th ar hi

of

Folly for both

va ve ti pi

Fdt

C

t:

d

11

nt

ds

m

1-

n

ly

1-

r-

2-

d

r;

)-

ir

rs

et

of

d

lg le

ef

of

d,

is

ir

ır

e

11

of

it: And others have all cause to suspect, but for prudential Reasons never will accuse: And others fee it well enough, but would not irritate too far, and make their Servants desperate by the Publication; hoping it will proceed no farther, but that the Grace of God will influence them to Honesty and Justice, and they will see the Folly and Naughtiness of all such Courses. Few Servants of any Note, or Continuance, walk fo invisible and in the Clouds, in any of these wicked Practices, as they imagine; the Eyes of their Superiours are often on them, when they little think And they will be deceiv'd, if they think that all are ignorant, who are filent; and that they are secure and unsuspected, because they are not charg'd or accus'd. This is the Rule that hired Servants may reasonably enough measure their Safety by: These methods of Indulgence and Forbearance would not be altogether fo discreetly us'd by Masters, with respect to them who are so moveable and fugitive, and ought not to be born with for a Moment in their wicked Frauds; but they are proper enough with refpect to Servants of a better Rank, and who are tied by Covenants to abide with them for Years. It is sometimes a piece of Charity, to endeavour, by a prudent Connivance and Concealment of their Faults of this kind, to reclaim them; because the divulging of them is likely enough to ruin them for ever, either by hardning them in Sin, or taking away their Credit, so that they never can be trusted or employed by any other. But this Concealment is to be fo prudently manag'd, that

that it shall not by any means encourage them to proceed in any fuch wicked ways; it would be well that Light enough should be let in upon the Servants, to let them see, 'tis possible their Masters may have some notice of their Practice, and yet not enough to convince them, that they actually know all: The Certainty of being difcovered, may either harden them, and make them impudent, or may discourage them too much, and kill their Industry and Vigour quite; whereas a light Suspicion may promote that Industry and Vigour, and give new Life, and fet them on endeavouring, with new Diligence and Honefty, to make indeed amends for what is past, and to remove all causes of Suspicion (as the Servants fancy) for the future: And to the helping on this good Defign, the Masters must not fail of frequently commending to those Servants Faithfulness and Honesty, and true and just Proceedings; for, by these means, they do their Duty, and tell the Servants of their Faults at the fame time.

T

te

But lastly, Let the Servants consider, that whether or no this Discovery be made to Men of their Injustice and Falshood, yet God sees them continually; they are always open to his Eye; and their false Practice will always be a Burthen on their Conscience; they must repent and make amends, or they will certainly be punish'd in the other World: This Consideration would prevent all Frauds and evil Practices in Servants, and keep them just and honest. What will it signify to conceal your Thests and Falshood from your Masters,

be he

af-

nd

if-

m

h,

e-

ry

m ef-

nd

its

is

eh-

d-

у,

ne

eof

in id

on

ie

nt

o

S,

Masters, and appear honest, when your own Heart affures you, you are false and wicked; and when your Conscience tells you, that God, who is to judge you at the last Day, knows you exactly; and that you cannot stray, even in a Thought, but he discerns, and marks it down? Try to conceal your Falshood from your self, and to corrupt your Memory from giving Evidence against you, that you may be at Peace and Quiet whilft you rob your Master: Use all your Art and Diligence to make your felf believe, that what you take from him is yours, and that you have a Right and Title to it; that notwithstanding you dare not let him see you take the least Sum of Money, or smallest Quantity of Goods that is, yet he is willing you should do all that you do, and is confenting: Do but try to make these things easy to you, before you begin, and then you will not so much regard whether God sees or no, nor be so apprehensive of him, if he do.

But 'tis a Madness for you to venture upon stealing, purely in hopes of lying hid from one Man's Eyes, when at the same time you know you are your self salse, and know that God sees and knows so too; and that the Torment of Guilt arises from a Man's own Conscience, and the Fear of Punishment from God's being Witness, as he is to be the Avenger of your secret Villanies. With the Fruits of your Injustice, you may gratify some vain or wicked Longing for the present; but when that is over, the Mind is immediately concern'd, vex'd, and disquieted at what is done; wishes it had been let it alone, is afraid

afraid of Shame and Discovery, and knows that Fact must be repented of: This is much more uneafy than the Disappointment and Denial of those vain Desires had been at first. To have the Mind perpetually burthened with the Remembrance of its Guilt, to live under constant Reproaches of Conscience, for having wrong'd and defrauded one's Master, who deserv'd no such Usage, must needs be a greater Trouble, than it could be to have wanted that Content and Satisfaction which was purchas'd by those Thests. And therefore, 'tis but a fad Bargain that a false Servant drives, that for fo little Profit gives away the Peace and Quiet of his Mind. He knows that God fees him, and knows that he hath threatned to punish Falshood and Injustice with severe Punishment; yet this he also ventures. He is, and with Reason enough, afraid of the Shame or Punishment, that might follow a Discovery of his Sins, from his Master here on Earth; but is not terrified enough, even with the Certainty of God's discerning him continually, and Refolution of punishing all fuch wicked People. It were but fit he should be more afraid of him, who can cast both Soul and Body into Hell-fire.

These are some of the Considerations that would stand Servants in the greatest stead, if they were present to their Minds; they would shew them the Baseness and Unworthiness, as well as the Wickedness and Danger of being faithless and dishonest Servants; and that would be the likeliest means of keeping them just and exact. The Third and Last Thing to be spoken to, is the Reason,

Grounds

Gr

all

K

wi

A

na

car

M

Re

Ser

Se

me

Fa

th

tri

m

go

it

an

an

ac

fe

tu

di

al

fe

fil

1-

le

d

of

of

d

ft

O

h

d

es h

: ;

n

it

1,

11

h

e

d

it

y

V

15

d

st

19

Ground, and Foundation of the Servants paying all Obedience, and due Service to their Masters; Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the Reward of the Inheritance; for ye serve the Lord Christ. A good Servant may not only promise himself the natural, and the usual Rewards of an industrious, careful, just and faithful Service from his earthly Master, and the rest of the World; but also the Reward of the Inheritance at God's hands, for he ferves the Lord Christ; one who, in the Form of a Servant, disdained not to live and die for the meanest of Mankind; who hath promised God's Favour, both here and hereafter, to fuch as do their Duties in the meanest Stations faithfully and truly; and one who is enabled to perform his Promiles to them. Good Service does, like other good Performances, pay itself in great measure; it carries its Reward with it; it gains the Favour and Esteem of all People: Care and Diligence, and Faith and Honesty, make their Service very acceptable, and consequently very easy to themfelves, and recommend them upon all Occasions: Those good Qualities raise them above their Fortune, and give them Reputation and Good-will, that make amends for the Meannels of their Condition. They give them Credit, moreover, with all that know them; they, who have ferv'd their Masters honestly and well, have laid to themfelves a good Foundation for their own Self-Subfiftence when they have occasion: The Neighbourhood will remember still their Diligence and Honesty, and promote their Good, by giving a good Report of them; they will be forwarded by

by all, and trusted more than others of greater Skill, and deeper Insight. Faithfulness and Honesty give Servants better Credit, than Industry and Labour; because that People naturally expect a Blessing should attend them; they think, and not without some Reason, that God is interested in their Favour and Behalf; they will rather leave room for Providence, and trust to Honesty and Justice, than favour the Skilful and Industrious, although they know no harm by them, but are not certain of the other good Qualities: But when they are all join'd, there is then no ques-

tion of their doing well.

These are Considerations that may help to alleviate their Misfortunes, and make their Condition easy to them. And, in truth, it is so well and wifely order'd by God, that every Condition of Life has fomething to make it not only tolerable, but comfortable enough, if People be not wanting to themselves; but will be careful, honest and religious, and discharge the Duties of it as they should. The State of Servitude is accounted the meanest and the most miserable of all others; but yet it is to be made eafy, though not eligible. Servants may have more of the Labours of Life, but then they have less of the Cares, than other People; their Bodies are more fatigu'd and exercis'd, but their Minds are less perplex'd: They are only concern'd in one Matter, to do the Work that lies before them, whilft others have a World of things to think on, and They have their Masters only to please; their Masters, may be, are to court and humous

humo fpeak their lation they 1 Misc them that, Maft ing c no g Mal um, less and abor rally and and as to mig Pro thef and

> of r b thef

infe add to t

and

ter

10-

try

X-

ık,

te-

ra-

0-

In-

m,

S:

ef-

11-

li-

ell

en

e-

ot

0-

it

C-

of

h

1e

10

re

fs

t-

ft

d

0

d

humour all they deal with: They, generally speaking, have themselves alone to provide for; their Masters have Wives and Children, and Relations. Whatever Scarcity or Dearness happens, they find but little Alteration; whatever publick Mischiefs oppress a Nation, they feel but little of them: Changes of Government affect not them, that, may be, quite undo and overthrow their Mafters: They contribute little to the supporting of the Publick, pay no Rates nor Taxes; lofe no gainful Employments, fuffer nothing by the Malice, or Infolence of Parties; undergo no Odium, Calumny or Slander: In a word, they are less distress'd and straitned, suffer less Hardships and Misfortunes, than any fort of People else above them. These are Conveniencies that generally attend Servants of the lowest Condition; and which they would do well to reflect on, now and then, as well to keep them the more easy, as to make them the more thankful, and that they might the better discern the Kindness of God's Providence in ordering Matters 10, that, with these Advantages, their Condition, however mean and low it is to all Appearance, is yet upon the square, for Ease and Happiness of Mind, with that of many of their Mafters.

But when, to all these natural Rewards, and these Advantages, some of them usual, and some inseparable from their Condition of Life, we also add the Reward of the Inheritance promis'd by God to the careful and industrious, the faithful, just, and honest Discharge of the Duty of Servants,

X

there can be nothing wanting to excite them to a due Performance of it.

Let them, therefore, for their Comfort and Encouragement, think upon these things. State of Servitude is absolutely necessary, by the Order and Appointment of the wife Creator and Disposer of all things: The World could not be govern'd and maintain'd without it; and it is fallen to their share, to be instrumental to the publick Good in that Station; not for their own, nor for the Sins of their Fathers, but by that Uncertainty of Affairs, that God, for wife and good, but undiscover'd Reasons, permits to be in the World: It is no Token of his Anger and Displeasure, for he is willing they should avoid and fly that Fortune by their Industry and Care; and blesses them with Opportunities, and gives them the fame Abilities, and natural Faculties, he gives the Governors and Princes of the World: It is not, therefore, any Sign of his Displeasure, that they are born, or became Servants; but so it happens, that they are so, and may free themselves from being fo as foon as they can: He only commands them, that whilft they continue fo, they should behave themselves as becomes their Condition, with all Submission and Humility, with all Obedience, Diligence and Industry, with Truth and Justice, Faithfulness and Honesty; which will make their Condition eaty to themselves, and cause them to be well ferv'd by others, whenever they emerge and get above it. But to shew how acceptable it is to him, and (because it is so necessary and ufeful

ulefi fes, t Life ed a have prop mak Wo like pen, here will Qui that Lib Tro wan fer; end and Sati Wh sha1 Suff thei Con mal Exp and

eafi

800

mo

200

useful to the World) to encourage it, he promifes, that they, who behave themselves well in this Life, as Servants, shall be look'd upon, and treated as Children, in the Life to come; they shall have the Reward of Inheritance, which is, what properly belongs to God's Children. They may make themselves as happy as they can in this World, and the doing their Duty well is the most likely means of being fo. But however that happen, God will not fail of making them happy hereafter; if they perform their Duty here, he will reward their Labours with eternal Rest and Quiet, and their Faith and Honesty with Rewards that never fail; they shall be happy in the glorious Liberty of the Sons of God, whatever Hardships, Trouble and Uneafiness they undergo, whatever want of Necessaries or Conveniencies they suffer; whatever Severities or cruel Inflictions they endure here, by the undue Rigour of their Masters and Superiours; there they shall have amends and Satisfaction made them in most ample manner: When once their Service is accomplish'd, they shall receive double at the Lord's Hands for all their Sufferings, and their undeferv'd Misfortunes. Let them support themselves, under the worst of their Condition, with this Hope and Expectation, and make it but a reasonable Hope, and a well-grounded Expectation, by discharging their Duty carefully and honestly as they should, and then they will live eafily; they will have the Earnest of Heaven in a good Conscience before-hand, and live and be more happy than their Masters, if they are not also

X 2

toa

and

The

the !

and

t be

fal-

pub-

nor

cer-

but

rld:

for

For-

1em

Abi-

ver-

ere-

are

hat

ing

em,

ave

all

ce,

ice,

eir

to

rge

ble

nd

ful

good Men.

There

There are two Things in this Divine Conduct worthy the remarking: First, That no Duty of Life, if well discharg'd, will go without Reward: It is not enough, that to be a good Relation in all respects, will make Men happy naturally, if all the World would do their Duty; for if all Men did their Duty to each other, all Men would be happy: But because some People will be foolish and unreasonable, some ill-natur'd and perverse, fome obstinately wicked and unjust; and by these means a great many Duties be neglected, flighted and defied, to the great Damage and Milchief of others, to their Misfortune and great Suffering; and that it is but natural, and feems reasonable, for one Party to neglect and omit the Duty which they owe to others, when they can fee no tolerable Returns of what Duty is due to them from others: Because of this, because that such Omisfions and Neglects are prejudicial to the Peace and Welfare of the World, God promises Rewards in another Life to the faithful and religious Dischargers of their Duties here, that will make amends for what is denied them here by Men's Unreasonableness or Malice, their Ingratitude or their great Wickedness; so that no one need to be discourag'd now, as though his Labours would be in vain. Good Subjects may have lawlefs Governours, and good Children unnatural Parents, and good Wives unkind and faithless Husbands, and good Servants hard and unreasonable Masters: And so on the other hand, these several Superiours may have their corresponding Inferiours all as naught: But the Good of Mankind requires that all these mudo Call to Men pence difcle This by go drer made man great what man great was a superior what was a superior who was a superior what was a superior who was a superi

gre of Me Tr. Me lig thi oth

niti

are Hea

the wi

w he an

tual

tual Duties should be well perform'd; and yet to do Good for Evil, is a huge Discouragement, and all these Duties would not be perform'd, unless Men had a hopeful Prospect of some Recompence, somewhere or other, to excite them to discharge them, and support them whilst so doing. This Prospect God lays open to all the World, by giving them the hopes of Heaven; that happy Country, of which, they who will be his Children, in Obedience, shall, for reward thereof, be

made Inheritors, and Heirs for ever.

duct

ty of

ard:

on in

if all

Men d be

olish

erfe,

hefe

nted

ef of

ng; ble,

nich

erarom

nif-

and

s in

arnds

na-

eat

g'd

un.

nd

ves

nts he

ve

ut

uial

The other Thing worthy remark, is this; that whatever difference and distinction God commands or permits to be amongst Men, yet the greatest Favours and Bleffings, the truest Dignities and Honours are common to all; and those are Graces and Virtues here, and Happiness in Heaven hereafter. All Men cannot possibly be great and honourable, nor be poffefs'd of Places of Advantage; all Men never can be rich; all Men can't be Governours and Masters, nor great Traders, nor remarkable in any Faculty: But all Men may be just and honest, virtuous and religious; all Men may live in God's Favour in this World, and may thereby be happy in the other: All Men cannot have Houses or Lands, Estates and Honours here; but all may have their everlasting Dwellings, Houses not made with Hands, eternal in the Heavens. may be Partakers of those Bleffings, which God, who knows us best, knows fittest for us; which he affures us are the truest Bleffings, which make and keep us happiest here, and which he has defign'd X 3

fign'd to crown us with hereafter. This is no little thing for Servants to confider, that howeyer mean and despicable their Condition may appear in the fight of Men; yet that, in God's Eyes, who understands the value of his Creatures best, they are of equal worth with the Great and Noble; that he has given them Bodies full as beautiful and useful, Faculties of Mind as fine and good; made them as capable of being virtuous, and exercifing Graces, has redeem'd them with the fame precious Blood of Christ, opened the same Gates of Heaven, and prepar'd for them the same Glory. Only they must behave themselves wisely and well in their Condition, and as becomes those that serve the Lord Christ, i. e. who profess themselves Christians. He is the common Master of the whole World, and 'tis to him his Seryants must look up; Him they must first and principally obey; and, under him, their feveral Mafters and Superiours, as he gives them Order and Command: 'Tis he to whom the Father has committed all Power; the Dispensation of Rewards and Punishments is in his Hands; and 'tis by his Commands and Rules, that he will judge the World in Righteousness: Accordingly as Men obey his Laws, and discharge the several Duties of this Life, in their distinct Relations, they shall fare in the other, whether they be High or Low, Great or Small, Rich or Poor, Bond or Free, Master or Servant; for with him there is no respect of Persons.

DIS

Mafte

ana

He

CT.

0

to pre

ules f

Difch

and I

lers a

Husb

vour

Servi

Infer

Let

lubin

ovey

yoter

Wro

hen

feri

Sup

bot

the

fere

diffe

DISCOURSE XVI.

is no

nowmay

od's ures

and

eau-

ood;

xerame

ates

Flo-

fely

mes

fefs 1af-

Ser-

rinlaf-

ind

mrds

his

he

en ies

ey

or

or

na

5.

COLOSSIANS IV. VERSE I.

Masters, give unto your Servants that which is just and equal, knowing that ye also have a Master in Heaven.

CT. Paul, in delivering the Duties that Superi-O ours owe to their Inferiours, is very careful to preferve the Decorum of things; and generally uses such Terms as might seem to imply, that the Discharge of their Part is a Matter of mere Grace and Favour, rather than of Debt or Justice: Rulers are not a Terror to good Works, but to the evil. Husbands, love your Wives. Fathers, trovoke not your Children to Wrath. Masters, give unto your Servants that which is just and equal. Whereas, to all Inferiours he fpeaks in a commanding louder Tone, Let every Soul be subject to the higher Powers: Wives submit your selves to your own Husbands: Children obey your Parents, in all things; and Servants obey your Masters in all things. But yet it would be a wrong Inference, that any one should make from hence, that therefore St. Paul intends to bind Inferiours to their Duties closelier and stronglier than Superiours to theirs; for his Purpose is to bind them both alike to the Discharge of all they owe: Only, the Nature of their feveral Duties requires a different Carriage and Behaviour in the Manner of discharging them; and indeed, the Way and Manner is sometimes Part of the Duty,

There

There is nothing more certain than that Superiours are oblig'd as much in Reason and Justice, and by God's Commands, to discharge what they owe to their Inferiours, as Inferiours are to difcharge what they owe to their Superiours. every Relation being built, and depending on a Contract, either suppos'd in Nature and Reason, or actually agreed upon and made betwixt the Parties related, upon what Terms they found convenient; it must needs be, that each Party is equally oblig'd to perform his Part of the Contract, upon which the Relation stands: For Justice and Religion know no Difference of Parties or Relations; with Them (as with their everlasting Fountain) there is no respect of Persons: They only have regard to what the Agreement is, and how it is perform'd. These Things have been fully spoken to, in confidering the feveral Relations People stand to one another in; and therefore, having urg'd the Duty of Servants to their Masters, from Reason and God's Commands, it is but fit the Masters should be put in mind of what they owe their Servants, and that I choose to do from the Words of St. Paul in the Text; Masters, give unto your Servants that which is just and equal, knowing that ye also have a Master in Heaven. In which Words we have to confider, First, What is to be understood by Just and Equal. Secondly, The Reason here affign'd, why Masters should give to their Servants that which is just and equal; and that is, the Knowledge they have, that they also have a Master in Heaven.

Eq

or

and

fan

rer

Sc

far

an

M

25

m

It

th

ne

bi

ei tl

B

ipe-

ice,

hey

dif-

For

n a

on,

the

on-

ial-

up-

Re-

ns;

in)

re-

er-

to,

ind

the

ers

eir

rds

our hat

ds

eron

eir

is,

1,

First, What is to be understood by Just and Equal. It is not indeed necessary, that when two or more Epithets of pretty near the same Sense and Signification are attributed to one and the fame Thing or Person, there should be a different Sense sought out for each Epithet: The Scriptures use a great many Words to signify the fame thing, but to fignify it with more Force, and to make the deeper Impression on the Mind of the Reader; and so do all other Books as well as that; and fo do all Men in their common Conversation, and cannot possibly avoid it: It does not fignify that they intend to fay different things, when they fay that fuch a one is an honest and a good Man; they make no difference in their Minds betwixt an bonest and a good Man, but they would only have it believ'd that he is either; and either of them serves their turn; and the using of both, is only to shew they are in earnest. And so there is no absolute Necessity, that to deal justly and equally, should signify different things, but only very justly or very equally: But if there be any difference intended by St. Paul, then it may be reasonable to think, that when Masters are bidden to be just, or to give that which is just to their Servants, they are bidden to give them that which is theirs by Contract and Agreement, that which is due in Law, as being bargain'd for, upon such and such Terms: And when they are bidden to give them that which is equal, they are bidden to deal fairly, honestly, and kindly with them, to give them what is their due in Reason and Conscience, although they have

have not formally contracted with them; to use them as well as other People, merciful and just, are supposed to use theirs, and as well as it may be supposed the Servants would have agreed for, had they suspected otherwise: In a word, to look upon themselves as much obliged in Reason and Conscience, as they would be by Bond and solemn Contract.

It is plain, there may be a great deal of difference betwixt Justice and Equity, if Men fo please: Whilst they make their Contracts and Agreements the measure of Justice; and Reafon and Conscience the Rule of determining what is equal. In this difference, we may well confider the Duty of Masters as somewhat different in being just, and being equal: And first, they are commanded to be just, to stand to their Agreements, to give their Servants what they have contracted for, whether it be Instruction, Wages, Maintenance or Cloathing, or whatever else is bargain'd for. Undoubtedly, whatever is agreed for, is in Justice due; and therefore, whatfoever Information or Instruction is requifite to qualify a Servant for the Calling and Profession he pretends to, is to be given him, as is due, and cannot be with-holden from him; it is the end which Servants of that fort propose and aim at, and the very Reason of putting themfelves into a state of Servitude: It is that for which especially they contract; for which they give their Money, Time, and Labour; and therefore 'tis a piece of great Injustice, to conceal the Skill that properly belongs to them, and

is

is t

car

Bu

de

du

if

tha

sk

ag he

T

on

fir

Vi

Se

an

ar

di

he

hi

n

it

is to make them Masters of their Calling: They cannot answer to their Contract, without the letting their Servants into the full Knowledge of their Business, according to the measure of their Understanding and Capacity; it is as much their due, as their daily Food, and detain'd with equal,

if not greater Injury.

to

ul

11

ve

a 'd

y

6

d

1-

g

y

y

r

A Master therefore is both faithless and unjust, that either, through Design, Envy or Carelessness, suffers his Servant to continue ignorant and unskilful in the way of his Profession, which he agreed and covenanted to make him understand; he breaks his Covenant, and answers not his Trust, by keeping back the Skill that is necessary to make his Servant what he aims at. The Servant is all the while deceiv'd, and loses the only thing he bargain'd for, expected, and desir'd, and for which he pledg'd his Faith and Service. This is one way of resusing to give to Servants that which is just, and that a very great and mischievous one.

Another is of denying them their Wages, the with-holding back the Price and Reward of their Service, that which they bargain'd and agreed for; which is as much the Servant's due, as any thing the Master has is his own; he has already paid for it, and to defraud him of it, is to rob him of just as much. It is indeed in the Master's keeping, but it is no more his, than any Stranger's: The Master sold it for so much Time and Labour, as the Servant and he agreed for, which being paid for by the Servant's Work, it is then his own. A Master may

may as well agree for Goods with any Customer, and receive the Price of them beforehand, and after that detain the Goods also, as take his Servant's Time and Labour first, and then deny him his appointed Wages. There is nothing plainer, and better understood, than the Reasonableness and Justice of standing to Agreements, such especially as were deliberately made, and which have been perform'd without Fraud on the one part; and yet there is Reason to think this part of Justice is very ill practis'd by many Masters to their Servants, as if they did not owe the same to them, as to their Betters. Some such idle Fancy must possess them, that Superiours are not equally oblig'd by contracting with Inferiours, as they are with Equals; for otherwise they would be as just to Servants, as to any one elfe. That which may make one eafily conjecture thus, is, that the higher we go, the better Quality and Fashion People are of, the more they are observ'd to offend against this part of Justice, the less regard they have to the Discharge of what is due by Contract to their Servants. So that that, which should be both to their Honour and Advantage (the ferving great People) turns to their greater Loss and Mischief; they are thereby only more injur'd and oppress'd: For this additional Guilt the Honour and great Quality of Masters add to Injustice, that they make it also It is Injustice to deny what is the Oppression. Servant's due; but when the Servants cannot, by the legal common Courses, obtain that due, through the great Power and Titles of their Maf-

by to for free

ter

It

or

Op

W

Ju

wa

the

fice his fur in

th th w

96

ters,

ters, then are they also oppress'd as well as wrong'd. It were some Shame to say, that either Law, or Custom should encourage, or should justify Oppression; for Justice is to sit the highest in the World.

nd

er-

m

er,

efs

ef-

ch

ne

irt

ers

he

ch

irs

e-

ife

ny

n-

t-

re

of

00

ur

ns

e-

d-

of

So

le

y

S

It might contribute to the doing this fort of Justice, to consider, that they who are backwardest to do it, are commonly the worst serv'd; they are often met with, tho' in a very faulty manner: For whilst the Servants live with them, they commonly live upon them; i.e. they find out ways to pay themselves with Interest; but it is by Frauds and Villanies, by allowing great Rates to fuch as deal with them, by being Ill-husbands for them, by going Shares with those that gain from them, and by a world of little Courfes that are false and wicked: One Injustice begets another: And though an unjust Master will not excuse a false and wicked Servant, yet he oft occafions it, by shewing him the way, and putting him upon some kind of Necessity of living by fuch Shifts: And therefore the furest way of being well ferv'd, is to be very just, to stand exactly to Agreements, and to give them their own; that makes them diligent and faithful, and gives them no Temptation to be otherwise: Whereas, when that which of Right belongs to them is denied them, they first imagine they may do themselves Justice, and then, by degrees, they give themselves great Reparations. Thus, by being ill us'd, they become wicked. Against this Injustice, God, in the Scriptures, gives Men frequent warning. Thus in Lev. 19. 13.

and Deut. 24. 14. Thou Shalt not oppress an hired Servant, that is poor and needy; whether he be of thy Brethren; cr of thy Strangers that are in thy Land within thy Gates: At his day thou Shalt give him his Hire, neither Shall the Sun go down upon it; for he is poor, and setteth his Heart upon it, lest he cry against thee to the Lord, and it be Sin unto thee. The Hardship is indeed the greater, in detaining the Wages of poor Men who daily subfift by their Labours; but the Injustice is the same, whether you bargain by the Day or Year, in detaining their Hire from them. So in Fer. 22.13. Woe unto him that buildeth his House by Unrighteousness, and his Chambers by wrong; that useth his Neighbours Service without Wages, and giveth him not for his Work. Undoubtedly, this Woe belongs to all that defraud their Servants of their Wages, for they are Neighbours in the Scripture Sense of that Word; and they receive the profit and advantage of their Work and Service, and therefore ought to pay them for the same. So saith St. James, ver. 5. 4. Behold, the Hire of the Labourers, who have reaped down your Fields, which is of you kept back by Fraud, crieth; and their Cries have entred into the Ears of the Lord of Sabbaoth. The keeping back the Hire of other, and all Labourers, as well as Reapers, will cry unto God, and enter into his Ears; the Cruelty and Injustice is all alike, and the Offence the same: And therefore they, who make Conscience of paying the Day-labourers, should also know they are oblig'd to deal as justly by their Menial-servants, who also labour

for Foo niei hol his, or we of is r cau wit anf and anc mo trai fer lefs Me thr ing

W the Fri

to we w vai

for

1:1-

be

in

con

art

lit

the

len

In-

he

m.

eth

by

ret

n-

ud

ire

d;

eir

ay

ed

by

1.0

ck

28

115

nd

10

rs,

25

or

for them day by day. It is the fame Cafe with Food and Rayment, with any Profit or Convenience that the Servant has contracted for; it is in Justice due to him, and must not be withholden from him. When he has earn'd it, it is his, and his Inability of recovering it, by Might, or Law, makes it not less his due, than if he were actually possess'd of it. And the Injustice of detaining from Inferiours, weak and helpless, is rais'd and aggravated by that Confideration, because there is Insolence and Unmercifulness joyn'd When they have nothing to oppose or answer to the Right and Justice of the Servants and Inferiours Claim, they have recourse to Power and Might; they are richer, greater, and have more Friends and Interest, and by their help they trample over Justice: Nothing can betray a worfer Mind than this, to oppress the weak and helpless, either because they are ignorant of the Means of recovering their Dues, or unable to go through the Trouble, or bear the Charge of doing it: This is to take the advantage of Men's Weakness, which ought much rather to provoke their Pity and Compassion, and make them Friends and Patrons.

These, and whatever else Particulars are due to Servants by Contract and Agreement, may well be thought meant and intended by St. Paul, when he commands the Masters to give to Servants that which is Fust.

The other part of what he commands, is to give them that which is Equal, i.e. to deal fairly, honestly, and kindly with them, to give them

that which is their due in Reason and Conscience, although they have not formally contracted for it: And this may include all the Particulars abovementioned, which were due in Justice, and recoverable by the force of Law; for a Man may be as unjust in detaining that which the Law would not compel him to deliver, as that which it would force from him, and give to the true Owner. It is the Reason and Benefit of the Contract, that makes it at first binding, and obliges the Conscience to make it good, before the Penalty of Laws come to be confidered: If one Man borrows Money of another, he knowshe is oblig'd in Conscience to repay him, although he is not under formal Bonds to do it; the Benefit he receives he knows is naturally conditional, and requires the being answered in the like kind, which he on his part promises, and the other expects: The Bond, that afterwards fucceeds, is to constrain him to do that Justice, which his own Conscience told him he must do, without Constraint. It is therefore evident, that where the Reason and Benefit of a Contract appear, there the Conscience is equally oblig'd to stand to it, and make it good, as if it were never fo formally made in Words, and tied by Penalties: For tho' all Contracts naturally suppose mutual Promises and Engagements; yet the Bottom and Foundation of those Promiles is the Sense of some Benefit receiv'd, or the Hope and Prefumption of some to be receiv'd; and therefore that is the Obligation at the bottom. And therefore, there is a presum'd Contract, wherever the beneficial Effects of one appear, although thou Ifth Serv fcier thou twe bec: vifit to . inde thei who fcie tice moi that the the due Slig in] difc Evi tha

wa

upo

dor

Ob

wh

wit

cee

ing

ce,

for

ars

nd

ay

W

ich

ue

011-

ges

lty

or-

in

ler

he

he

his

id,

to

old

re-

of

al-

as

nd

al-

ts;

0-

or

d;

ot-

et,

al-

gh

though there be no formal one actually made. If therefore a Master receive the advantage of his Servant's Time and Labour, he is oblig'd in Conscience to make him a sufficient Recompence, although there were no Bargain formally made between them: This the Conscience says is equal, because the Reason and Benefits of a Contract visibly appear. This Rule is not only applicable to Masters with regard to their Servants, but indeed to all Mankind with respect to one another. The Mind may be in Chains and Fetters, where the Body is, and must be free; the Conscience often is oblig'd, where the Forms of Justice can take no hold on him, so that there are more Priloners than we fee or think of: Many that walk at liberty, and feem to be as free as the Air they breath in, that yet know within themselves, that they are truly Prisoners, and due to Justice, though they elude it by some Slight or Falshood. They know they are oblig'd in Reason and Justice, and good Conscience, to discharge a great many Debts, which yet no Evidence, no Judge or Jury can extort from them: Their Credit, may be, was so great, that they gave no Bond: Their reputed Honesty was fuch, that Men were glad to deal with them upon their own Terms: Or else they mortgag'd doubly, gave false Security, or so contriv'd their Obligations, that they should be infignificant when tried. The Justice of the Laws purfues with Hatred and Abhorrence all these wicked Proceedings; but the Subtilty of wicked and defigning People is too much for them; they triumph 113

in her Weakness and their own Skill, and, in contempt of her, walk at great liberty: But 'tis the Liberty of Body only; for the Mind is all that while in Bonds, and knows its Obligations, knows what is truly just and equal, with respect to Reason and Conscience, however it escape the

Cognizance or Penalties of Laws.

But by Equal is also to be understood such Usage and Treatment as is fair, good natur'd, and humane; to make their Lives as easy as we can, confiftently with the Performance of their Duty, and our Business; and therefore not to purfue them with perpetual Contumely and Reproach, nor use them as we do our Beasts of Burthen. It is one of the worst ways in the World of shewing our Superiority, by giving ill Language, and Words that become no body to receive. The Condition of Servitude is of it felf grievous enough, without the additional Evil of being, on all Occasions, treated with Contempt and Scorn: And if the Truth were known, the Service is not the better perform'd for fuch perpetual Chidings and Upbraidings, especially in so unfeemly a manner. The Nature of our Country is not so vile and disingenuous, as always to want fuch galling Spurs, and sharp Excitements to the Performance of the Servants Duties. Good Words at least should be the first Experiment that all Superiours should make, and be as long continued as they can, they are so handsome and becoming reasonable and religious People; and to be fure those Servants that perform their Duty, do it better with good Words, and live more

are with

T adde rigor are : ratio prod the J mus fectio ing give their they tion' ters and with to h lity cafio Fere conf tinu

are one' acted wear

of v

com-

comfortably; and without doubt those Means are fittest to be us'd, that best attain their End, with the Ease and Pleasure of both Parties:

on-

the

hat

ns,

ect

the

uch

r'd,

we

neir

ur-

ich,

ien.

of

ige,

ive.

ous

ing,

and

Ser-

rpe-

1 fo

un-

s to

ents

ood

nent

ong

and

and

uty,

ore

om-

To this Comfort of good Words, must also be added good Usage; Masters must not be overrigorous in their Punishments, when Servants are faulty, but should inflict them with Deliberation, good Intention, and Compassion. produces often fad Effects, even where it prompts the Parents to correct the Children; and therefore must be carefully attended to, where that Affection is not present to restrain them from exceeding the bounds of Moderation: This is also to give them what is Equal. The Masters owe their Servants Admonition and Reproof when they are found faulty, and Punishments proportion'd to their Guilt. To this Moderation Mafters also are to have regard in their Commands and Impositions; they must not oppress them with immoderate Tasks and Labour, but are to have a merciful respect to the Capacity, Ability and Strength of Servants. It was one Occasion of the Institution of the Sabbath to the Fews, that Servants might be relieved, and not confume a miserable Life in constant and continued Labours.

It is true, that the Servant's Time and Labour are the Masters, and he is to give them to no one's tife besides: But yet they are to be exacted with Equity and Reason. Men must not wear out the Heart, nor make all wast they can of what is truly let out to them, although it be not expresly covenanted against; because it is

Y 2

pre-

prefum'd in Reason and good Sense, that others are to succeed in the Possession of those Lands. A Servant is not so to be consum'd with Toil, as to be made unsit for other, or for farther Service: He is not presum'd to consent to such a Bargain, though all his Time and Labour still belongs to his Master. They are therefore very much to blame, that have no Consideration of their Servants, that never think they do enough, but are continually charging them with new Tasks, without any Rest or Intermission: This is

not dealing equally with them.

But farthermore, under this Head may well be comprehended all other Care that is fit to be talen of them, both in their Health and Sickriefs; the giving them good Advice, and fetting them a good Example, affording them Opportunities of serving God, both at home and abroad; the infirecting them according to their Leifure and Abilities in the common Rules of Honesty and Justice, Truth and Faithfulness; exciting them to Diligence and Industry, and encourageing them therein; and, in a word, to make them virtuous and religious, that they may be as useful in the World as they can; and to fee, in case of Sickness, that they want not what is fitting their Condition: These are Courses that are likely to make good Servants, and to encourage fuch as are fo, and to oblige them to ferve their Mafters with the greatest Care and Affection possible; there being none of fo low and abject a Spirit, but who will strive to make amends for kind, good-natur'd Usage.

All

1

to b

the

60,

tha wh

are

me is

nes

Ma the

of

fide

the

tha

TI

fo

w

the

11

th

G

to

th

rit

VC

he

o/

All these Particulars may well be understood to be injoyned by St. Paul, when he would have the Masters give their Servants that which is just

and equal.

hers

nds.

oil,

Ser-

h a

ftill

very

1:01

igh,

new.

is.is

Vell

sd. c

ick-

ting

rti;-

oad;

nre

efty

ting

ige-

iém

eful

e of

heir,

v to

1 25

111-

ole;

irit,

ind,

All

The Reason here assign'd, why they should do fo, is next to be confider'd; and that is, knowing that ye also have a Master in Heaven. To make which Words a binding Reason to Masters, they are to contain either a Promife of Encouragement to fuch as give to their Servants that which is just and equal, or Threatning to such as shall neglect the doing it. And confidering who this Master is, the Lord Christ; he that shall judge the quick and dead, with whom there is no respect of Persons, who is to punish and reward: Confidering this, 'tis certain that the Words intend them both; namely, an Encouragement to thole that shall comply with the Command, and Threatning to fuch as shall neglect it. As they contain an Encouragement, they may be understood thus: Masters, give to your Servants that which is just and equal, knowing, or remembring, that ye have also a Master in Heaven: One from whom you expect the just Performance of all thole great and precious Promifes, which, of his Grace and Goodness, he at any time hath made to you: And one from whom you look for all the Mercies and Benefits, both Temporal and Spiritual, that are either fit for him to give, or for you to receive: And one who hath promised to be a bounteous Master to all his faithful and obedient Servants, to shew Mercy to such as shew Mercy to others: He took upon himself the Form of

X 3

of a Servant, and lived a mean precarious Life, depending, for ought that appears, upon the Charity and Friendship of good People for his Subfiftence, and on the Entertainments his Doctrine gain'd him; and therefore hath exempted that, and every other poor and mean Condition, from Contumely and Reproach among Christians, and made them rather, for his fake, Objects of great Pity and Compassion. Behold, saith our Saviour, I am among you, as he that serveth, not only to give his Disciples an Example of Humility and Condescending, now and then, on just Occasions, below their outward State and Quality, when it is to be ferviceable to one another; but to fanctify all Conditions of Life, and to shew the World, that God looks not with Man's Eyes, that he has no respect to Persons, that he regards not Birth and Fortune, Quality and Title; but that the meanest People in the World are acceptable with him, if they obey his Laws, and do his Will: That it is Goodness, Virtue and Religion, that recommend Men to his Favour, and nothing else, of which the Poor and Servants of this World are full as capable, as the Rich and Mighty, and most honourable Masters. he hath made them Partakers of the same Grace here, and capable of the same Glory hereaster, so he commands them to be treated here with all the Mercy and Humanity that their Condition is capable of receiving; upon this Principle, no doubt, that all the World should be as happy as they can: And this is that, that every fingle Person in the World should govern himself by, to make

and a is in but t able, of th lated his of a Few don der The Sub dre is a cip 1. € Ea wi ba de ar th fe

re

b

n

r

make

ife,

the

his

Doc-

oted

ion,

ans,

s of

Sa-

nly

and

ns,

n it

nc-

the

es,

rds

ut

ot-

do

e-

nd

of

ıd

as

e

r,

make each fingle Creature in the World as eafy and as happy as he can, in the Condition he is in; not to molest, afflict, or injure any one; but to do all Justice, and to shew all Mercy we are able, confiftent with our own Benefit, and that of those to whom we are more immediately related. Our Master, that is in Heaven, hath, by his Laws, confulted better the Ease and Benefit of all Inferiour Relations of Men, than either Jewish, Greek, or Roman Lawgivers have ever done; their Condition is much more happy under Christianity, than any other Dispensation. The State of Subjects under their Princes, the Subjection of Wives to their Husbands, of Children to their Parents, of Servants to their Masters, is abundantly more easy by the Rules and Principles of that Religion, than to any People elle, i. e. Christianity hath provided better for their Ease and Comfort, if those that are concern'd will follow its Directions. Christianity does not barely leave these Things to the Civil Laws and Customs of the Country, but it gives new Orders in their Favour; where Laws and Customs are unrighteous, cruel, and unreasonable against them, it mitigates them, and commands its Proselites to change them for good-natur'd, just, and reasonable one's: In a word, Christianity is the best Religion that ever was, for the Good of Mankind; it best secures the Rights and Honours, Priviledges and Advantages of all Superiours, and best consults the Ease and Happiness of all Inferiours, by the most strict and indispenfible Obligations it lays on all Men, to be exceeding

ing just and merciful, and to discharge their several Duties to each other with the utmost Care and Faithfulness that can be. And this it does. beyond all other Dispensations, by Promises of Grace and Favour here, and mighty Recompences in the World to come, of which our Lord and Master is to be the Judge and sole Dispenser.

This End it also aims at, and purfues, by the Threatnings of the greatest Punishment to such as shall neglect their several Duties; for that is also implied in the Words of the Text, Knowing that ye also have a Master that is in Heaven. what becomes you to your Servants; give them that which is just and equal, remembring that ye also have a Master in Heaven, that commands you so to do, and who will also, one Day, take account how ye have done it. With this your Master there is no respect of Persons; the Bond and Free are all alike to him; the meanest Servant is as dear to him, as the most honourable Master: All shall be judg'd alike, and most impartially: The false and disobedient Servants shall be punish'd, and so shall all unjust and cruel Mafters.

Now what can shew the Excellence and Usefulnels of the Christian Religion better, than the Care it takes to secure the Happiness of all the World, by fecuring the Duties of all Relations, Natural and Civil, by fuch Rewards and Punishments? Be but a just and good Prince, and you shall be belov'd and fear'd by all your Subjects; be an obedient Subject, and you shall live secure; if not, expect the Rods and Axes, Be a good Faill f belo illı you one Be be the and fat the Di Bu D tr

la

11

ther.

ther,

recei

Son, and

belli

imp 2 80

be 1

unk

· fe-

are

oes,

s of

en-

and

the

uch

al-

ing

Do

em

ye

nds ike

our

nd

erble

mall

la-

le-

he

he

ıs, h-

u

5;

e;

1-

ther, and you shall have obedient Children, and receive great Comfort from them: Be a good Son, and you shall be belov'd by your Parents, and all that know you: Be disobedient and rebellious, and you shall be rejected, disinherited, imprison'd, and, it may be, punish'd farther. Be a good Husband, and you shall live easily, and be belov'd and honour'd by your Wife; be an unkind or false one, and you shall be hated and ill spoken of. Be a good Wife, and you shall be belov'd and prais'd; be a bad one, you shall be ill us'd, or elfe divorced. Be a good Mafter, and you shall be well ferv'd; be an unjust and cruel one, and all shall hate you, and fly from you. Be a good Servant, and you shall be well us'd; be a bad and faithless one, and expect the Mill, the Mines, or a Halter. These are the Hopes, and these the Fears, that other Laws and Dispenfations hold out; these are the Promises, and these the Threats that are to bind Men to their leveral Duties, and to deter them from neglecting them: But what Security is this, to what the Christian Doctrine offers; when to the faithful, just, and true Discharge of all Men's Duties, it offers all the natural Advantages of doing well, and everlasting Life in Happiness besides? And to the free Contempt and Neglect of all these several Duties, to all the natural Inconveniencies and Milchiefs of doing ill, it threatens endless and amazing Punishments? What strange Encouragements to good Morality are thefe? What strange Discouragements to bad? Allow it but (as well you may) that the true and honest Discharge of every every Man's Duty to each other, in the Relation they stand in, is the surest Way of making and keeping all Men eafy and happy throughout the World, and you will fee that nothing ever fo confulted the Good of all Mankind, even in this Life, as the Christian Religion. For had the Legislator, and the Moralists of all Countries and all Ages, delivered the same Lessons with those of Christ; yet, not being able to bring to light this Immortality of Life in Pleasure, or in Pain, they must have talked but finely to little purpose; and all their Laws have wanted the most powerful Sanction. This also shews how great a Part (almost indeed the Whole) of true Religion, good Morality makes up, to which the Rewards discovered by especial Revelation are affixt, and to the Neglect of which the Punishments reveal'd are all threatned. Let no one, therefore, think it so indifferent a thing, whether they well or ill discharge the Duties of their several Relations; for if Religion were divided into Parts, the Duties that we owe to one another, would make up five of fix; and Heaven and Hell, we fee, are to reward their good Performance, and punish the Neglect of them. And let a Man take care to have a due Regard to Justice, if a Magistrate, and live in obedience to the Laws as a good Subject, approve himself a dutiful Son to his Parents, and a good Parent to his Children; a faithful and good-natur'd careful Husband to his Wife; a just and equal Master to his Servants, and a good, diligent and honest Servant to his Masters; let him discharge with Care and a good Conscience the Duties Dutimuc these gion Objet vani wer just Mei inde Rel this

Du

ion

and

the

fo

his

the

ind

ofe

ght

lin,

le;

er-

art

on, rds nd l'd nk or 15; uup to he to

nd ct, nd nd ist lim he es

Duties of his different Relations, and fee how much he will want of being a good Christian: If these were well perform'd, the rest of our Religion would go down with ease; the Scruples and Objections made to Doctrines would go near to vanish, if our disorderly Affections and our Will were once fubdued to Reason, and we were truly just and honest Men; and, to speak in fashion, Men of great Probity, and good Morals: For that indeed is the very Life and Substance of Christ's Religion; and in the Sense and full Perswasion of this, I have been so long infisting on the several Duties that we owe to one another, and with which I have now done.

FINIS.

Duty of Alafres in country. parties of his diferent Relations, and its language in the will write of beauty a cool Christian and hade were werd perform do no refr of our will. on would go gown with our the Samp. o or out filtrow or or Self, ou so the applicable figure our duorderly his long and ou till were once fishelised to Root and the west - du at and hone? Men; and, to theat in the second Then of event Parties, root or A Wester T and based is not office books. constitution is the Sound of the Parketing I have been long and a second beautiful. the second of the second country

THREE

SERMONS

ON

SELF-MURTHER.

By WILLIAM Lord Bishop of ELT.



LONDON:

Printed for John Hooke, at the Flower-de-luce, over-against St. Dunstan's Church in Fleetstreet. M DCC XVI.



NDO

to,

gre 21 nor ma tha ed fer

And for k

Mathin der thon Con vio his ord bur

SERMONI.

II SAMUEL XVII. VERSE 23.

And when Ahithophel saw that his Counsel was not followed, he sadled his Ass, and arose, and gat him home to his House, to his City, and put his Houshold in order, and hang'd himself, and died, and was buried in the Sepulchre of his Father.

These Words contain a plain Account of what happen'd to a most unfortunate and wicked Man; and to make them as useful as I can, I think it will be best to treat of them in this Order: First, To speak to the disastrous End Ahithophel came to, he hang'd himself, and died. Secondly, To the Occasion of it, he saw that his Counsel was not followed. Thirdly, Something previous to his Execution, he arose, gat him home to his House, to his City, and put his Houshold in order: And Fourthly, to what followed, he was buried in the Sepulchre of his Father.

First, The disastrous End that Abithophel came to, was, that he hang'd himself. This was a Death of Insamy, and allotted by the Laws to great Malesactors: And therefore it is said, Deut. 21. 23. He that is hanged, is accursed of God; not for dying, but for deserving to die in that manner. It was his Crime, not Punishment, that made him accursed of God: His being hanged on a Tree, was to denote some great Offence that deserv'd that Punishment, and sor which

which he had incurr'd the Divine Displeature. And so, when our Saviour is said to be made a Curfe for us, by dying on the Crofs (which St. Peter, in Acts 10. 39. calls hanging on a Tree) it is with respect to this Sentence of the Law in Deut. He bare our Sins, and was put to the like Death, and underwent the like Ignominy with those Offenders, who, under the Law, were accurfed of God. This Death Abithophel underwent, not by any Sentence of Law, but by his Choice, upon some private Consideration; and tho' he avoided the Ignominy of such a Sentence, yet the Ignominy of the Death was not to be avoided; because it was accounted an ignominous and accurfed Death, and was appointed for notorious Malefactors. But the Use we may make of his choosing this particular, rather than any other way of dying, is very little, unless we may observe, how far the wifest Men are blinded by their Paffions, when, to avoid fome Shame, they run into Courses that directly lead to it. The Thing to be principally confidered, is, not why he died in this manner, but why he died at all; what Right he had to put an end to his Life, by hanging himfelf: Fo:, to do this, without blame, a Man must be at perfect liberty both by the Laws of God and Man, and independent on them both: There must be no Obligation on him, either from the Law of Nature and right Reason, or from the revealed Law of God, or from his lawful Superiours upon Earth: For if any of these with-hold his Hands, he cannot innocently lay them on himself. Now, as to the Law of

much of De Hear fectio ral F have more teen if it Doc thou of (that fing and tho mo than Wi nef Co we len and w Hi or ca

Fr

th

bi

of N

lie.

e a

) it

in

ike

ith

ar-

115

nd

ce,

be

)!-)!-

y

11

t

of Nature condemning this Practice, I do not fo much appeal to that innate Love of Life, and Fear of Death, which is generally implanted in all Men's Hearts (for these Men, being freed from these Affections, will deny their Power) as to that general Abhorrence that all Nations of the World have had that Practice in: And the more wife, more civil and polite those Nations have been efteem'd, the more they have condemn'd it; which if it be not a Proof of the Reasonableness of any Doctrine, we shall never find what is. though there be a great many Examples, both of Greeks and Romans, even in their best times, that fell by their own Hands, upon some preffing Extremities; yet their Kules, their Laws, and their Reasonings, were all against it. And those Examples against their Rules, are of no more Authority to countenance fuch a Practice, than the Example of Men committing any other Wickedness, will countenance such other Wickedness, against their Reason, and against express Command of God. Their Rules, and their Laws were against Adultery, and Rapes, and Violence, Oppression, Exaction and all Injustice; and yet their great ones were guilty of them all, when they found their Opportunities: And their Historians often mention them without Reproach or Blame; and some were still found, that would call their impure Liberties, Gallantries, and fine Freedoms; and their Oppressions, Conquests; and their unjust Invasions of Kingdoms, glorious Ambition, and Enlargement of Empire. But a Man would be much mistaken, if he thought that this

was the Judgment of their wife and fober Writers, or of the grave and serious Part that go. vern'd them; or that fuch Practices were countenanced by their Laws, and Rules of living. This I mention, to obviate that Objection, that many Passages are found in the Writings of these People, in Commendation of fuch, as, to avoid fome great Calamity, have put an end to their Lives by their own Hands; for that will always happen, that Men of loofe Principles should have false Notions of Liberty, and Honour, and great Courage, and should accordingly commend such Practice as is conformable to fuch loofe Princi-And we, who live in an Age, where every thing is justified by some poor Writer or another, though never so extravagant, impious, and unreasonable, should not be hard to believe, that fo it has been heretofore with other People, and fo will be hereafter: And yet we should be loth to have Posterity believe, that this was the Sense, the Reason, the Understanding, and the Judgment of our Age, in the general. We must consult the wife, the sober, and the serious Writers of the Times, the Laws, the Rules, and Reasonings of the grave and governing part of a Nation, to understand their true Sense of Matters of Moment: And from them we shall learn, that Self-Murther was evermore an abhorred Practice among them; that whatever pretence it made to great Honour, Magnanimity and Courage, it was indeed but an Effect of Cowardice and Fear, and a Mark of a poor impatient Spirit, that funk under the common Calamities ot

of L that fert give their the 1 tain Part Opin who have Vio. mor tice are; or B to t ledg Wo wha Lav be n thin Fear nish has no kno we

upo

fo n

at p

whi

Vri-

go-

nte-

This

any

eo-

ome

ives

nap-

ave

reat

uch

nci-

ve-

110-

and

hat

and

1to

nfe,

dg-

uft

ous

nd

of

at-

all

or-

re-

nd

ar-

nt

ies

of

of Life, and knew not how to bear Misfortunes; that it was Disobedience and Impiety, to defert the Station, that their Supreme Commander give them to maintain, and act apparently against their Sovereign's Order. I trouble you not with the Particulars, because there is no need: 'Tis certain, the confidering, virtuous, and religious Part of Mankind have all along been of this Opinion, and condemn'd the Practice of those, who, to free themselves from some Misfortunes, have ended their Days, before their Time, by Violence; and it would be no great wonder, if more Examples, and more Defenders of this Practice were found among the Gentiles, than there are; because they were, many of them, Atheists, or Believers in fo many Gods, that it almost came to the same thing: And to them, who acknowledge no Supreme Power, who governs the World, and to whom Men are accountable for what they do, 'tis a vain thing to talk of the Laws of Nature, and right Reason; for let them be never so plain and clear, they will go for nothing, where they may be transgress'd without Fear of being vindicated by any Power, or Punishnishment. And, doubtless, if a Man believes he has no Body hereafter to account to, he will fear no Master or Superiour here, from whom he knows he can escape so easily, by Death. we are now supposing the Belief of God, and upon that Bottom affirm, that a Man cannot be so much Master of his Life, as to throw it away at pleasure, without regard to that Will of his, which appears to be written in our Hearts, for-7. 2

bidding fuch a Practice; of which, the concurring Confent of the wifest Lawgivers, and Writers of the wifest and most civiliz'd People, of all Ages, is, I think, one very good Proof.

As to any Declaration of the Will of God, in this Particular, in the written Revelation; it is not to be expected there should be a single Prohibibition of every fingle Sin, that a Man can commit; 'tis sufficient, if there be general Prohibitions, that include them all. And fuch is, in this Case, that general one, of, Thou shalt do no Murther; which fecures the Life of every Man and Woman in the World, whose Life is not obnoxious, by fome other Command, to be taken away: As, the Laws, for Instance, punish Thest, and other Crimes with Death, notwithstanding the fixth Commandment; because Men commit other Offences, to which Death is due by other Laws of equal Force with the Law against Mur-But it is Murther still, to take away any one's Life, and an Offence against the fixth Commandment, if that Life be not forfeited by some other Law of equal Force and Obligation with this against Murther.

But these Commands do all respect our Neighbour only; and they, who murther themselves, know and confess they are tied by the sixth Commandment, not to murther any one else. To this it may be answer'd, that this is downright to beg the Question in hand; for if the Letter and the Sense of the Command will reach a Man's self, as well as his Neighbour, why should not the Commandment include our

felves?

delve

ther

ther

Secu1

yet

bea

aga

ny

me

do

the

bo

of

ly

no

ir

m te

n

lelves? A Man is murthered, when he mur-

thers himfelf, and the Command prohibits Mur-

ncur-Wrie, of d, in isnot hibicomhibi-, 111 lo no Man not ken reft, ing mit her urny mne

th ur 1-

r

e

ther: And though the Commandments of the fecond Table do especially refer to our Neighbour, yet not exclusively of our felves: We may not bear false Witness against ourselves, no more than against our Neighbour; because the Truth is hurt thereby, and some Wrong done by such a Testimony; fo that where it is possible for the Commandments to take in our own Case, there they will do fo, as well as our Neighbour's. But to make the matter plain, let it be taken for supposed, that both the fixth and the rest of the Commandments of the fecond Table respect our Neighbour only; and we may ask, whether by Neighbour, is not to be understood any one that is truly injur'd by our Offence, as well as the Party most immediately concern'd? The feventh Commandment, for Example, is, Thou shalt not commit Adultery. When a wicked Man falls into this Commission, and abuses his Neighbour's Bed, does he only offend against the Partner of his Sin, the adulterous Woman, or also, against the injur'd Husband? Does he not also offend against his own Wife, if he have one? Does he not offend against the Parents and Relations also of his wicked Accomplice, difhonouring their Name, and House; and filling the Family with Grief, and Shame, and much Confusion? When a Man steals, against the eighth Commandment, does he only offend against the Party whom he immediately wrongs, or allo against those who suffer by that Wrong? When one bears false Testimony, against the ninth Commandment, Z 3

mandment, and thereby defeats a Man's Title to his Estate, his Office, or Employ, does he not offend against the Wife and Children of that Man, who lived by that Estate, or Office, or Employ, as well as against the Man and Master of that Family? You see then that the Commandment respects more than one Party, under the notion of Neighbour, even all that are injur'd by that Transgression. Now I ask, whether this does not happen also, in breaking the fixth Commandment, by murthering one's Neighbour? Are not the Wife and Children, and the Family, made very miserable by fuch a Death? And I ask again, whether the same Mischief does not follow to one's own Family, by a Self-Murther, as to another Family, by the Murther of another? And if it do, tis certain that the fixth Commandment forbids Self-Murther, as fure as it does the Murther of another; because it forbids the Consequences of Self-Murther (which are Shame, and Grief, and Loss, and Pain, and Injury, and all forts of Mischiefs) as certainly as it forbids the Confequences of murthering any one besides; because a Man is no more at liberty to injure and afflict his own House and Relations, than the House and Relations of a Stranger. therefore he offend against his Neighbour, even all that are injured by his Offence, as well as the fingle Party injur'd more immediately; 'tis manifest he also offends against his Neighbour, even all his own House, Relations, and Dependants, by taking away his own Life; fince (as I faid) the Consequences are the same, and full as cala-

by a ther expr to h hold God to C do. Cau doe. Nei 'tis exce Self feer Con Nei imr dor nati jur' bar

and

lati

Co

and

on

and

nat

calar

as th

calamitous, to my own Family, by fuch a Stroak, as they would be to another Family, if I should, by a Murther, deprive it of a like Relation. therefore, a Man were at full liberty, as to any express Command of God, to do that violence to himself; yet he would be obliged to withhold his Hand, by many other Commands of God, which forbid the doing so much Mischief to other People, as fuch a Violence does always There is therefore nothing gain'd to this Caule, by alledging the fixth Commandment does not forbid Self-Murther, as relating to our Neighbour only, i.e. to other People; because tis manifest, our Neighbours, other People, are exceedingly mischief'd by the Breach of it in Self-Murther. The Mistake in all these Cases feems to be this, at the Bottom, the thinking the Commands of the second Table refer to one Neighbour only, namely, the Party concern'd immediately in the Injury; whereas they do undoubtedly refer to all Neighbours that are, by a natural and eafy Consequence, concern'd and injur'd: As the Wife in the Husband, the Husband in the Wife, the Parents in the Children, and the Children in the Parents; and so in all Relations, more or less. And therefore, if the Commands of God, prohibiting Adultery, Theft, and False-witness, are understood to prohibit not only the fingle Acts, but also the mischievous and wicked Consequences of those Acts, which are natural and unavoidable; 'tis plain the fixth Commandment does the like, and therefore forbids Self-Murther, unless it can be separated Z 4

ohis
fend
who
well
ily?

our, ion. in

nore

he

vn nio,

r-

from all those mischievous and wicked Consequences that unavoidably follow that Practice.

And, that these Consequences are equally intended by God the Lawgiver, and are to be as much regarded by Men, as the prime Mischief and Occasion of them, may appear farther from hence, (as well as the Guilt of Self-Murther) that though a Man were never fo weary of his Life, and fought as willingly for Death, as People in Pain for Ease, and wearied Labourers for Rest and Sleep; yet were it utterly unlawful to give that Man the Satisfaction he desir'd, by killing him; not only because it would be murthering of that fingle Man (notwithstanding his Defire of dying) but because of the Mischiefs following to the Family, by fuch Death. First, It would be Murther to kill a Man, though he were very defirous of dying, and requested it, as a Kindness, at your hands: Murther therefore does not barely confift in Violence that is offered to one, against his Will; but, in taking away a Life which you have no Right to take away, by the Laws of God or Man. But why have you no Right to do that which he desires of you, fince Wrong is done to no one who is willing, and he conveys his Right to you, by his defiring you to kill him? The Reason is, he has no Right himfelf, and therefore can convey none to another. If he were Master of his own Life, so as to lay it down at pleasure, by God's Law, I do not see but he might make you Master of it, if he pleas'd, and by full Confent. Whatever he can lawfully do to himself, he can, if he will, empower you to do

do to

you t

he ca

Reaf

Law

God

agai

10:

Mar

wot

low

fent

thro

to

the

chi

it.

Cr

M

the

Fo

a

no

it

P

th

tl

K

F

nfe-

111-

as

om

er)

his

0-

or

to

il-

r-

e.,

1-

It

e

e

do to him; and whatever he cannot empower you to do to him, he cannot do himself. he cannot empower you to kill him; and the Reason is, he has not power (I mean by God's Law) to kill himfelf: For if he had power by God's Law to kill himfelf, he would not offend against God's Law, by commissioning you to do fo: Taking it therefore for granted, that to kill a Man, though willing and defirous to be kill'd, would yet be Murther before God, it will follow; First, That a Man has really no such Confent to give, his Life is not in his own power to throw away (for if it might be given, it might Secondly, That Mischief may be done be taken) to one that is willing and confenting to it; and therefore, that Self-Murther is not the less mischievous and injurious, because a Man consents to And, Thirdly, that Murther (as well as other Crimes) has especial respect to the Injuries and Mischiefs that other People suffer, as well as to those inflicted immediately on the Party concern'd. For if Murther be a Crime, because it deprives a Man of what is so valuable as Life (although not valued by this Man, who willingly parts with it) it is also a Crime, because it deprives other People of the Affistance, Help, and Comfort which that Life either did, or might afford them. And that which another Man's Life is to his Relations, Kindred and Dependants, that is your Life to your Relations, Kindred and Dependants; and therefore no more to be cast away by you, than his is to be taken away by any other Man. I have

I have repeated these things, that you might fee the plainer, how a Man's Life is not his own to do as he pleases with it; but, that could he be supposed to be at liberty, with respect to his single felf, to throw it away at pleasure; yet that his Duty and Obligation to his Relations (not now to fay the Publick) would constrain him not to do it: And this by the Law of God, even by the Sixth Commandment, which, forbidding the Injuries and Mischiefs consequential upon Murther, as well as the Murther itself, must also be underflood to include the mischievous Consequences of Self-Murther, as well as any elfe. And if the Consequences are prohibited, the Cause and Oc-

casion of them also is prohibited.

I alledge, in the next place, that both the Fews and Christians, few or none excepted, have all along condemn'd this Practice, and thought it was condemn'd by the Sixth Commandment in general, as well as by other Paffages in Scripture, by natural and unstrain'd Consequence. Although, to do them right, they never fail'd to affirm, that to doviolence to one's own Life, was to act against Reason and Natural Religion, withdrawing our Obedience from our Supreme Commander, withstanding his Will, distrusting his Care and Providence, and betraying an impotent and effeminate Mind; shrinking from beneath the common Accidents of Life, and able to bear nothing uneafy; together with those other Arguments which are every where to be met withal, and which, therefore, I meddle not with at pretent; being content you should only observe, that Abh and drea conf that on 1 to d Mu felf Crin are fays BlocIma wha wha Ima hole aga not maa Blo and Th: Self of a

this

Peop

eve hib

wh

wh

pro

this

n

e

e

is

0

0

le

1-

1-

of

le

25

11

15

e-

y

1,

17,

1-

1-

e

d

le

)-

1-

1,

2~

is

this Practice hath been all along condemn'd by People of all Religions, and purfued with great Abhorrence, and all manner of Discouragements, and by the Christian Religion especially with dreadful Sentences: And therefore, let every one consider seriously what Obligations the Consent, that is so general, and so reasonable, must lay upon them. To think it is not forbidden by God to destroy the Work of his Hands, because Self-Murther is not named expresly, is to leave yourfelf at liberty to commit a hundred other hateful Crimes, that are not specified in particular, but are concluded under general Heads. When God fays to Noah in Gen. 9. 6. Whoso sheddeth Man's Blood, by Man shall his Blood be shed, for in the Image of God made he Man: 'Tis plain, that whatever the Meaning of the last Words are, in whatever Sense Man is said to be made in the Image of God; the Reason of the Prohibition holds as strong and good against Self-Murther, as against the Killing any other Man. For, if I must not fled the Blood of another Man, because he is made in the Image of God; I must not shed the Blood of my own felf, because I also am a Man, and made alike also in the Image of God, as he is. That Reason, I say, (whatever it is) restrains Self-Murther just as much as it does the Murther of any other Man. But I will also add (and which I would you should remember) a Reason, why Self-Murther is not, any where, exprestly prohibited by its Name; and that is, that whatever Sins and Offences God, as a Lawgiver, prohibits, he prohibits with a Penalty; He affixes

fuch a Punishment to such a Crime, and he who commits that Crime, is to undergo the determin'd Punishment in this World, whether it be Restitution, Loss of Limb, or of Life itself. Now this can never happen in the Case of Self-Murther, which prevents all Punishment, and therefore prevents all Threatning, and all Laws. When I fay, that God prohibits no Offence, without affixing a Punishment to its Transgression; I do not mean, that he always did it himself, but that it was always done by his Appointment, Order and Decree; though for the most part the Punishment is nam'd by him himself. But neither God, nor Magistrate, can prohibit Self-Murther with any Penalty that can affect the Criminal himself; because, by his very Crime, he escapes all temporal Punishment in Person; he is dead before you can take any cognizance of his Offence. You fee, then, what Reason there is, why Self-Murther was not expresly prohibited, by Name, by God, or Moses, by Command of God. No Law can be enacted, to any purpose, without a Penalty; where therefore there can be no Penalty, there can be no Law: Now Self-Murther prevents all Penalty, and therefore wants no particular Prohibition: It must therefore be included under general Commands, and forbidden only as a Sin, of which God only can take cognizance, and that in another World. This Satisfaction was owing to that common Objection, that Self-Murther was no where expresly forbidden by God by Name, tho abundance of Matters of much less moment were, in the Holy Scriptures. But I must say, up-

ווו

on

len

Pra

tho

is I

wh

oth

not

not

wh

M

col

tu

tha

an

tic

the

Pr

on

ca

an

R

in

ar

or

m

S

P

antl

on this Occasion, that Scripture-Silence is true Silence, and fays nothing either for, or against any Practice: And that when, in this Relation of Abithophel, as also of that of Judas's sad End, there is neither Blame, nor Commendation bestowed on what was done by either; we must judge by some other Rule, whether they did well or amifs, and not by the Relation; which neither blames by not commending, nor commends by not blaming what is related. It is most certain, that Self-Murther is forbidden by God in general, and by consequence in many places of the Holy Scriptures: And is really utterly irreconcileable with that Patience under Afflictions, that Refignation and Submission to the Will of God, in all Conditions of Life, however fad and calamitous, that the Christian Religion certainly requires of its Professors. And to think it is no Sin to destroy one's felf, is one of the fatallest Mistakes a Man can fall into, and fruitful of all ill Consequences, and utterly condemns all the Wisdom, and all the Religion that ever was esteemed in the World. But I will, at prefent, only infift on your confidering what has been faid, concerning the Mischief and the Injury done, by these sudden Stroaks, to our Neighbour, i. e. to other People. There is fometimes a great Loss to the Publick, by throwing away a valuable and useful Life: Always Scandal and Offence taken by good, but weak People; and some are missed by such Examples. But who can express the Pain and Grief, the Shame and the Confusion of all the innocent Relations that furvive? Even natural and easy Deaths create a world

who in'd estithis her,

fore en I

not it it and ient

nor any be-

can ee,

her , or be

ere no

ty, It

mich

10nat

no,

ent ip-

on

a world of Sorrows, and make a deal of humane Life (short as it is) tedious, and full of Trouble: Sudden and accidental Deaths affect us yet deeper; and if they have any thing remarkably calamitous and fad in them, it is worfe still. But when 'tis violent and deliberate', then are they perfectly oppress'd and overwhelm'd. Is this the Care Men are to take of those who love them best, and who are, often, best belov'd by them? Does this look any thing like Piety to Parents, or Kindness to Wife and Children? Yet this is the Return that these unnatural Children make to Fathers and to Mothers, if alive; this is the Dowry that these Husbands leave their Wives; and this the Patrimony Fathers convey to their Descendants. 'Tis true, indeed, these miserable People intend not these Misfortunes and Afflictions to their Friends and Kindred; they have it not in their Hearts to entail fuch Misery upon those to whom they wish all Happiness: But so it is, they fee, in other People's Cases; and so, they know, it must be in their own: And 'tis no matter what they purpose, when what they do will have its natural Operation, and occasion all these Mischiefs. I think, if any Confideration that is purely humane, could restrain these cruel Violences, it should, and would be this, of faving so much Pain and Sorrow, and Confusion, as they unavoidably occasion to the best and nearest Friends they have in the World, by parting in fuch man-Is it so hard for you to bear a ner from them. little Poverty, a little Shame, Reproach or Infamy, or even the Fear and Apprehension of these things?

thin you Fan You vili and loa tha per zin M

Str Bu for on

lo ft to o re

th

ou-

yet bly

But

ney

the

em ?

or

he

to

v-

nle

to

in

y

1

things? So hard, that you will rather die than venture them, or than endure them? And yet you will entail them on your Kindred and your Family, who have done nothing to deferve them: You will leave them to the Reproaches and Revilings, and the ill Usage of a pitiless, insulting, and uncharitable World; who will be fure to load them with the Infamy, and the Dishonours that you leave them. But, above all, with what perplexing Doubts and Fears, with what amazing and distracting Thoughts, do you fill their Minds, concerning your Condition in the other World? That Concern, indeed, touches even Strangers; all that hear of fuch fad Accidents: But that's an easy transient Trouble, in comparifon with that which Kindred and Relations feel on fuch Occasions, whose Grief is equal to their Love, and lasting as is their Life.

Sometimes it happens, that the Consideration of doing Mischief, or Dishonour to those they love, and to whom they owe all Duty, will restrain People from doing what they incline strongly to do; and from doing which, the Confideration of their own Honour, Interest, and Duty will not And therefore, it were well if restrain them. thefe unhappy People, when they forget God and themselves, would yet permit the Sense of the Duty they owe their Neighbour, even their best Friends, and nearest Relations, to dwell upon their Minds, and have its Work upon them; that they would be content to live, at least till they can die without doing Wrong or Mischief to other People. This is what the Consideration of Abithophel's End led

led me to fay, in opposition to a Practice that prevails too much among us, of People's destroying themselves, as he did. When the Jayler (who had receiv'd fo strict a Charge of securing Paul and Silas, and knew that he must answer Body for Body for his Prisoners) found the Prison-doors open, he drew out his Sword, and would have kill'd himfelf, if Paul had not cried out with a loud Voice, Do thy self no harm, for we are all here, Act. 16. 27. But this Jayler was a poor Gentile, an ignorant and unlearned Roman, in all likelihood; and therefore it is no great Wonder, to fee him forward to dispatch himself in such a manner; who only had it in his Mind to avoid, perhaps, a lingring and tormenting Death, for letting his Prisoners scape, by one more quick and eafy, by his own Hand; and knew, it may be, nothing of any other Life than what he was leaving: By fuch People one can hardly expect the Laws of Nature, or the Dictates of Reason, or the Opinions of wife Writers, should be considered; they live by Sense, and are govern'd by their Passions. But better things might be expected of Abithophel; a Jew, a Man of better Education, a Man of Birth, the King's Counfellor, and accounted fo wife, that whoever advis'd with Ahithophel, it was, in those Days, as if he had enquired at the Oracle of God; and therefore so much feared by David, when he heard he was with Absalom, that he prayed expresly to God, that he would defeat the Counsel of Ahithophel, before he knew what it was; as knowing it would be shrewdly mischievous, if followed. That one thus qualified should dare to die in such a manner,

5

is still

Abith

and a

in an

the V

equa

last n

to de

Obec

the I

Wor Chri

Man

the I

right

Sins

Rep

lie:

of C

Bap

be,

and

ord

ther of v

ture

eve

fon Pra

cor

wa for

litt

re-

ng

ho

rul

for

n,

m-Do

nt

·e-

to

id

r-

id

in

n

d

n

e

0

is still more strange and unaccountable; yet even Abithophel's Self-Murther was not near fo wicked and audacious, as fuch an Attempt must needs be in an Understanding educated Christian; to whom the Will and Commands of God are reveal'd with equal Certainty, but with much greater (at the last much plainer) Arguments and Motives, both to deter from all Offence, and to encourage to A Christian, that believes in God, Obedience. the Immortality of the Soul, and the Life of the World to come, fo much, that he could not be a Christian without such Belief; nor indeed a wife Man in being a Christian; one that believes, that the Wrath of God is now reveal'd against all Unrighteousness; that without Repentance no Man's Sins can be forgiven; that after Death there is no Repentance; but that as the Tree falls, so it will lie: That fuch a Man as this, professing the Faith of Christ crucified, and covenanting with God, in Baptism, to take up the Cross, and bear it, if need be, to Death, should, in the Impatience of his Soul, and press'd by some Calamity a little more than ordinary, deliberately choose to throw this Burthen off, by committing what he knows a Sin, of which he knows he never can repent, and venture the most dreadful Consequence of that to everlasting Ages, is what no Body could ever reafon themselves into the Belief of, if the frequent Practice of some most unhappy People did not convince us, it might be done by letting us fee it was: But 'tis, in truth, a great Reproach to Reaion and Christ's Religion, that so it is; and not a little Dishonour is also cast upon our Nation hereby,

by, as furnishing more Examples of this fort of Violence than any other, tho' much larger: Tho' that Reproach may help a little to fave the Honour of Religion, as casting this bad Practice, somewhat, on our Climate, Diet, Liberty, Complexion, and Way of living. But I would make no manner of Excuse for it; 'tis a Practice to be abhorr'd and condemn'd with all our Zeal, to be purfued with all Pity; and to be guarded against with all our Care and Prudence, all our Reason and Religion, our walking in the Ways of God with all Stedfastness, and pouring out our constant Prayers for his preventing and affifting Grace, that his Fear may ever be before us, and that no Temptations to fuch Impiety may ever prevail upon us. Of the rest of the Particulars contain'd in the Text, in the Manner already laid out, you will read in the Discourses following.

SER-

And w

follo

him

Hoz

and

ther,

dispos

nor a

But the tempt in the which God Image ther, Man as muthat Thef bidde it w

quen bidd ther thou of 10'

loneon,

in-

ed all

li-

all

ers

ns

he

he

he

?-

SERMONII.

II SAMUEL XVII. VERSE 23.

And when Ahithophel saw that his Counsel was not followed, he sadled his Ass, and arose, and gat him home to his House, to his City, and put his Houshold in order, and hang'd himself, and died, and was buried in the Sepulchre of his Father.

Aving, already, taken occasion from these Words, to consider the Case of Self-Murther, and shewn that Abithophel had no right to dispose of his own Life, in the manner he did; nor any Man else to offer violence to himself: But that all Men were restrain'd from such Attempts, by the general Law of God, contain'd in the fixth Commandment forbidding Murther; which being grounded on the Reason given by God in Gen. 9.6. that Man was made in the Image of God, did as certainly take in Self-Murther, as the Murther of any other Man, every Man being himself made in the Image of God, as much as his Brother: And shewn moreover, that the Consequences of Murther, Adultery, Theft, and False-witness, being as certainly forbidden by God, as the prime Acts themselves, it would unavoidably follow, that the Confequences of Self-Murher were as certainly forbidden, as the Consequences of any other Murther: And therefore that the fixth Commandment, though especially relating to the Duty we owe our Aa2

our Neighbour (i. e. to one another) did as certainly prohibit Self-Murther, by prohibiting its Confequences, as any other Command prohibited the prime Act, by prohibiting the mischievous Effects that follow from it unavoidably; and anfwered, as the Time would let me, the common Objections that are rais'd, in justification of these forts of Violence: I am now, without farther Repetition, to proceed to the Second thing I was to speak to, namely, the Occasion of Abithphel's Self-Murther; which was, that he faw that his Counsel was not followed. The History of that matter is, in fhort, this: Abfalom, by his popular Demeanour and artful Management, had eltrang'd the Hearts of the Jews from the Love and Obedience they owed to David his Father; and there was so great a Defection, that it is, really, unaccountable, from what appears in the History: In this, Abithophel was deeply concern'd, and was accounted the very Life and Strength of the Conspiracy: And being call'd to give his Advice what Absalom had to do, he took care, in the first place, to make the Breach irreconcileable betwixt the Father and the Son. In this thing Absalom followed his Directions closely, as you may fee, in 2 Sam. 16.20. But advising farther, Chap. 17. to purfue David closely, with a Body of Men that might certainly surprize him, he was, in this Point, oppos'd by Hushai the Archite, another very able Counsellor, and fent by David, on purpole, to go over to Absalom's Party, to defeat the Counsel of Abithophel; and he did it effectually: For his Counsel was the more plaul-

and w all the hai th thoph differ only Abith was t Count to his bim e pecia to fee ther great up: I had Abit of th a Di Secon fel b the the I

Absa

his

give

the !

ple

pent

old

dien

ble (t

ble (though not so good for the young Prince) and was accordingly followed, both Absalom and all the Men of Israel saying, The Counsel of Hufhai the Archite, is better than the Counsel of Ahithophel. I leave you to read yourselves the different Counsels of these two Statesmen; 'tis only to my purpose to observe, that the Distast Abithophel took at his Advices being rejected, was the occasion of his Ruine; When he saw his Counsel was not followed, he arose, and went home to his House, set his Houshold in order, and hang'd himself, and died. There were two Things efpecially, that gave him this Discontent; the First, to see his Counsel not followed, but that of another Man preferr'd before his; a Disgrace that a great Statesman knows not how to bear, or put up: His Counsel was (you will find in his History) had in so great Account, that to advise with Abithophel, was, in those Days, as if one had enquir'd of the Oracles of God: And this Esteem makes a Difgrace sit so much heavier on the Mind. But, Secondly, he saw the Consequences of his Counfel being rejected; he faw his new Choice, and the Party he had turn'd to, would be ruin'd, by the Advice of Husbai the Archite: He knew that Absalom would not be able to hold it long against his Father; he had loft his Opportunity, and given to David Time and Breath, which was the only thing he wanted; and leifure to the People of Israel to consider their Revolt, and to repent, and timely to make their Peace with their old King, by returning to their Duty and Obedience: This was the fatal Miscarriage of Absa-Aa 3

ing its ibited ievous

comion of ithout thing

that of that popuad ef-

Love ther; it is,

con-

l'd to took irre-

. In ofely,

g farith a him,

Ar-

arty, lid it auli-

ble

lom's Affairs, that Abithophel faw clearly, and faw it was not to be retriev'd, and faw, perhaps, the Treachery of Husbai, and his Design in giving fuch Advice. And he knew very well where David's Wrath would light, with all his Vengeance, when he should be resettled on his Throne again, namely, upon the Evil Counsellors, of which he was himself the Chief. He saw, the Heart of a good old indulgent Father, would (if he fcap'd with Life in fight) quickly pass by, and spare the Rashness of a young and giddy Prince, his beloved Son; and discharge his Fury on the wicked Instruments that had seduced him to Rebellion: And you may fee by the Tenderness and Care that David took of Absalom, in his Charge to Joab, before the Battle, and the Grief he felt upon his Loss; you may see by this, how rightly and truly Abithophel judg'd of Matters, and how well he knew where the Storm at last would fall, even chiefly on himself, who had given fuch mischievous Counsel, that had it been purfued, David had certainly been loft. this, he knew, he must pay down his Life, when David should return with Victory; there was no Pardon for one fo able, and deep engag'd in the Conspiracy as he: And therefore he resolves to prevent the Stroak of David, by one of his own. So that here is the Sense of a Disgrace past, in having his Counsel rejected, and the Fear of farther Shame and Pain to come (the Consequence (he faw) of his Counfel's not being followed) that occasion'd him to fall into this desperate Refolution, of laying violent Hands upon himfelf. When

W Ahith pointe they a Mind mach know tion, All I tions they proa they cani other thin dead felv that that on ' ter. fho the ger the Wi wl of Pe

th

Te

lfaw

, the

ving

here

Ven-

his

nsellaw,

ould

by,

ddy

ury

nim

ler-

his

rief

ow ers,

aft

ad en

or

en

no he

to

72.

in

r-

ce

1)

e 1-

n

When Men engage in any wicked Practice, as Abithophel here did, and find themselves disappointed, and their great Purposes defeated, and they are brought to Shame, or into Danger, their Minds are not equal to their Burthen; their Stomach is fo high, their Pride fo great, that they know not what to do with that fingle Imagination, of what the World will think or fay of them. All Men, they fancy, are Observers of their Actions, and have their Eyes upon them; and when they have miscarried, all Men censure, and reproach them, and condemn them. So that tho' they can bear the Guilt themselves, yet they cannot bear the Shame it occasions them with others; this oppresses and confounds them. think one may observe, that in, almost, all these deadly Resolutions that People take against themfelves, there is fomething worldly at the Bottom, that meets with fome naughty Passion or other, that prevails against their Reason, and sets them on this bad Work. And what can one infer better, from this Example, than that every one should be extreamly careful, how they engage themselves in Matters of great Difficulty, or Danger, lest the Disappointment be too great for them: And that not only in Matters certainly wicked and forbidden, but even in all others, where the Event, if not fuccessful, is like to be of great, but ill Consequence to them; for few People understand themselves throughly, or know the Strength or Weakness of their Minds, in great Trials; and therefore should not easily put themselves upon them.

Aa 4

But

But fince the Accidents of Life, that are neither to be foreseen, nor prevented, trouble us as much as the Miscarriages of our own Designs deliberately laid; the next useful Caution may be, to have our Minds so prepar'd, and our Affections fo fubdued, and kept in fo good order, that the common Calamities of Life, though they may furprize, yet may not quite confound us: That we may not be so lost and destitute of Succour from our Reason, as to give our selves up to the Guidance of our present Passion, and follow where that leads: For this, indeed, is the common Lot of those who fall into the desperate Refolutions we are speaking of: Their Passions are always high, never controul'd or check'd, evermore indulg'd and yielded to; fo that when grievous Accidents befal them, they know not whereabouts they are, nor whither to turn themselves: They can bear no Loss or Disappointment, nor fall from the Condition, in which they formerly were, but abandon themselves entirely to Sorrow, and Despair. The Bottom of this Mischief is, that they place their whole Happiness in the Attainments of this World, in the possessing Riches, the enjoying Honours, and in the Praise and Approbation of Men: And therefore when the first make to themselves Wings and fly away; the Hearts of these People fail with them, when they fall from their Honours, and lose their Dignities; they know not how to breath in any other Air, nor how to want the Courtship and Respects that were wont to be paid their Power and Interest, not their Persons. When

the the are that wi mo aff

no ar le to w

E fi

I

as de-

be,

ons he

ay

lat

ur he

W

n-

e-

re

r-

en

n

h

1-

e

n

they lose their Credit and Esteem, and sink in their Reputation, whether deservedly or no, they are dejected to the lowest ebb; they are asraid that every Eye, that looks upon them, views them with Contempt, and that every Tongue is evermore reproaching them, which makes them asham'd of Light, and weary of living.

Riches, indeed, are of great use to the making Life easy; but the Happiness of Man's Life does not depend upon abundance of Wealth: Some are happy in a little, and all may be happier in less than they imagine: But, not to philosophise too much upon this Head, get what you can with Innocence and Honesty, with Virtue, and the Fear of God; and keep what you can with Justice to your Neighbour, and Charity to the That Poverty which I have now in my Eye, and which is fometimes the dreadful Occafion of the mischievous Designs I am speaking against; that Poverty is not, usually, the Want of Riches, which we never could obtain, but which we once were Masters of, and have lost, either by Accident, or viciously mispent. 'Tis the Remembrance of our former Affluence, that makes our present Want so hard and insupportable, even when we are undone by unforeseen Calamities, and had no faulty Hand in bringing ourfelves into Yet fuch a Poverty as this, tho these Streights. attended with all Men's Pity, and no Reproach or Blame, is fometimes so laid to Heart, that the Man will not endure to live under it; than which there can be no Resolution more weak and unreasonable, tho' it were not finful. Can one think the

the Life of Man should lie so much at the Mercy of every Accident, that may deprive one of one's temporal Estate? The Misery should seem much greater where our own Vice has brought this Poverty upon us, and our Ill-husbandry reduced us to Extremity; for there we reflect upon our own Folly, and find it was we ourselves that did ourselves this Mischief; and as we bear the Smart, fo we bear the Blame alone: When the Providence of God afflicts us, we submit to that; when the Malice of Man afflicts us, we lay the Fault there, and think of doing ourselves Right, too often, by fevere Revenges. And when we afflict ourselves, we can no more help condemning ourselves, than others; and sometimes take, we fee, as fevere Revenges on ourfelves, as we would on others. We must therefore take as much Care not to bring ourselves to these Extremities by our ill Management, and vicious Courfes, as we must not to provoke others to do us as great Mischiefs; because the Suffering is generally the fame, and the Consequence, sometimes, much worse, and the End is Self-destruction. The Reproaches Men's own Hearts make them, when they have ruin'd themselves and their Families by Folly and wicked Courses, are often so sharp and painful, that, with all the Spirit and Courage they can get, they cannot bear up under them: And this is an Effect fo fure and constant, that when it does not end in fuch deadly Violences, yet it ends in all manner of fottish, loose, and wicked Courfes: And therefore Care, Sobriety, and frugal Courses are the best, if not the only Preservatives, tives, against that furious Outrage, or that violent Grief, that the Sense of such a faulty Poverty throws Men oft into. A little Wisdom, moderate Resolutions, and Strength of Mind, will keep a Man right at first, and hold him in the Ways of Goodness and Virtue; when a great deal of every one will be necessary to recal him, when he once has wandered. You do not know what a Change of Mind, a Change of Fortune, fo much to the worfe, will work in you, nor how you will be able to struggle with such Difficulties. Take care therefore, in time, to avoid the dangerous Experiment: The Reflections on your wicked Extravagancies will not make fuch Impressions, it may be, on your Mind, whilst you are able to feed, and continue them on, as they will, when all is gone; and you have nothing to divert you, but are left to be confum'd, and eaten up (as it were) by them.

One is almost asham'd to warn People of salling into Poverty, occasion'd by their Vice, for fear of Self-Murther; but that such Poverty is, now and then, the Occasion of such Violence, and the Fear of Want, the Parent of such desperate Resolutions. 'Tis easy to see what must be said on these Occasions, when People have brought themselves to a Morsel of Bread; namely, that 'tis an ill Way of repairing their past Folly and Wickedness by one to come, that will exceed them all, as much as Heaven is higher than the Earth: That the Misery they endure will end in Death at least, and it may be it will come quickly; and that the Sins that brought them to that Misery,

Misery, will be forgiven upon Repentance, be they never so great and many: Whereas the Course they pitch upon to relieve themselves, is a Sin that admits of no Repentance, and consigns them to Pains and Sorrows that will have no End, These are Arguments that cannot possibly be answered; but for fear they should come too late, when Men are deaf to Reason, and the Mind is obstinately bent upon its wicked Purpose (as deep Woes do strangely six the Resolution) it were much better that they should prevent their coming into such Necessities, as lay them open to these Temptations, by living in Sobriety, Temperance, and such Good-husbandry, as well besits their Estate and Condition.

Pre-eminence, moreover, Dignities, and Offices of Honours, are not only useful, but absolutely necessary to the good Government of the World; and, without them, there would be no Peace, no Order, no Society, or Civil Commerce among Men; and therefore they are, all of them, the Matter of a very lawful, laudable Ambition: And he who defireth an Office and Employ of Honour, provided he intend to discharge it well, and to do the Good that Office requires, does nothing but what he may honeftly do, altho' he also have his eye upon the Recompence that goes along with it, and, without it, would not undertake it. But then Men shew the Weakness of their Minds, when they have tied themselves so close and fast to these Employs and Honours, that when they come to part with them, it is as if their very Hearts were rent afunder; and they are full of deep

deep Resentment, or a Sadness that is never to be remov'd, and oft precipitates their Death, and sometimes too by Violence. And though it does not often happen, that Men, who fall from their Honours and great Employs, do these cruel Violences to themselves, yet it sometimes does: And I am speaking now to a Practice that, God be thanked, never can be common; but yet which happens much too often, even as often as it hap-

pens.

And to make this Head more useful, 'tis certain that People of lesser Fortune and Figure are as much transported with Rage and Resentment, and take as mischievous Resolutions at their little Disappointments and low Falls, in their low Stations, as the greatest do at theirs, that make more Noise by falling higher: And therefore have equal need of taking care, that the Love of Superiority, and Preserence, and Distinction, take not such fast rooting in their Minds; but that if the Time of yielding come, they may do it without Impatience, Rage, and deep Resentment.

Credit, Esteem and Reputation, are also, in the last Place, so useful to the Well-being of Men, that all imaginable Care is to be taken to gain them, and secure them. There is not that Man in the World, but would be in the good Opinion of all he knows, and all that know him; nothing is easier to the Mind, nothing more useful to him, in all his Affairs, than that all Men should think well of him. Even the Conscience of our Innocence, and the sull Certainty we have that we have

have not deferv'd an ill Reputation with this or that Man, cannot so fortify our Minds, but some Concern will arise in us, when we think thereon; and we had rather much stand right in their Opinion, though we have nothing to fear from them, nor any thing to hope for at their hands. We are made to to depend upon one another, on purpose that we may do each other all good Offices: And the Bottom and Spring of all good Deeds being the good Opinion of their Deferts to whom they are done, 'tis necessary we should think well of other People; and as necessary to be well thought of by them, in order to receive their Favour. Upon these Accounts it is, that we fee all Men so extreamly careful to preserve and defend their Reputation and good Name: And therefore 'tis no Wonder, if the Lofs, or Danger of it, affect Men very much, and fehfibly afflict them: A Man, without it, think he lives amongst a Band of Enemies, who are only restrain'd by Fear, from doing him all manner of Mischief; or, if not this, yet that he is the Subject of their daily Scorn, which is falling lower, than if he were the Subject of their Anger or Revenge, because he would be thereby reckon'd more confiderable.

'Tis hard, that that which is so useful and delightful to every Man, should be lost so very easily; but so it must needs be with a Thing that is not in our own keeping, but in every Body's else, to give or take away, as Interest or Humour pleases. But though this be true in the general, that our Reputation depends upon other People;

yet

yet

tion

as l

han

inv

ter,

ou

wi

hir

ho be

fid

ha

by

an

th

in

0

a

yet (to do the World Justice) a Man's Reputation with his Friends and Acquaintance, and fuch as know him pretty well, is very much in his own hands, and will depend, in the main, upon his Virtue and Discretion; the first of which is his inward Guide, and directing Principle; the latter, to govern his exteriour Carriage and Behaviour. And therefore, an honest and prudent Man will keep up his Reputation with those who know him: His Honesty will make his Actions good and honest, and his Prudence will provide they shall be done in the best manner. And when both Infide and the Appearance are right, a Man will hardly be in danger of losing his Reputation with those he values most, and would be best esteemed by; altho' he may with fuch as know him not, and take up every thing on trust. But, indeed, the Infamy, Difgrace, and Shame that drive Men to those wicked Practices (we are now especially intending to divert Men from) are generally. grounded, not on Malice or Mistake, (tho' much of both is feen in all great Accusations) but upon Facts that are truly infamous and wicked: Men have done fomething that is either exceedingly unworthy of themselves, or mischievous to others, which excites both Amazement and Abhorrence in those who hear of it, and raises so loud a cry against the Actors; that, striking, first upon the Imagination strongly, is never after out of their Ear; they think they hear of nothing but their Infamy, and that all Mouths are full of their Reproaches, and that every Look and Gesture speaks Contempt and Indignation at them: And fancying

ing themselves to be thus unacceptable to all abroad, and feeling themselves guilty at home, there arises in their Minds such a Mixture of Grief and Shame, Vexation, Fear, Remorfe, and other different Passions, that they are almost strangled with the rifing of their own Thoughts: And, to deliver themselves from that insupportable Oppression, run headlong into Death, by the first way their poor disordered Fancy prompts them to. The only way therefore to avoid these dreadful Mischiefs, is, to continue in the ways of Reason and Virtue, to be guilty of no Extravagancies, nor any fuch Practices, as draw the Hatred or Contempt of the World after them. And it is easier far to preserve our selves from these notorious Crimes, and Follies, than, when they are committed, to guard our Minds against the wicked Suggestions they may offer. A Man in Innocence has a mighty Command over himself, above what he has, when Guilt, and Shame, and Fear have taken a full Poffession of him, bewilder'd his Thoughts, diffipated all his Recollection, and enfeebled his Judgment.

I am still for preventing Mischief, rather than remedying it, because 'tis both more easy, and more safe. And although there is no Reason, but is strong enough to disparage and bassle all that can be said in the behalf of these violent Attempts against our selves, when we are safe, and well, and free from any such Fears, and in no danger of these Temptations: Yet when Men come into those perillous Hours, and fall into those Straits and Trials, they are generally deaf to all

Reason

Rea

Sug

anf

So

wit

the

eafi

ent

tha

mo

tw

to

to

ly

ne

an

hin

fol

W

it

hi

an

gr

an

W

th

hi

ar

as

III

e, of

d

st

5:

t-

y

s e of Reason and Argument, and listen only to the Suggestions of their present Passions; they do not answer, but they do not bearken, to what is said: So that if they be not prepar'd before-hand to withstand such Assaults, they seldom do it, when the Danger comes. Abithophel could much more eafily have avoided practifing against his King, and entring a Confederate with rebellious Absalom, than, being once enter'd, could avoid giving the most pernicious Counsel to make the Breach between the Father and the Son irreconcileable, and, to cut the War short, by the Surprize of David, to fecure himfelf and Party: He could more eafily have stay'd at home, and been concern'd with neither Party; than, being once engag'd, to bear another's Counsel being preferr'd to his, and see himself neglected: He could more easily have followed David, and shar'd with him in the worst Fortune that could befal him (even though it had been to die with him) than, having made him his Enemy, to think of falling into his Hands, and dying the Death of Traytors. Here were a great many things for him to choose, more fafe and honourable than what he chose: And it was much more easy for him to choose any of them, than, having chosen amiss, and involv'd himself in great Dangers, to bear up, like a Man, under them, and not to be overcome with Shame and Fear, and take fuch desperate Resolutions, as he did. By all which, I mean to fay, that Men have it much more in their Power to keep themselves Innocent, and out of Difficulties and great Straits; than, being once guilty and involv'd, to deliver themselves (not from their Dangers, but) from the distracted Counsels, and Suggestions, their Minds in such Confusion offer them; although they be fuch, as they themselves, when fafe and fober minded, would have flartled at and abhorred. They think it a point of Wisdom, in their Straits, to embrace such Counfel, as would have been accounted mad, and fenfeless, in Prosperity. One Argument, therefore, to perswade Men to preserve themselves innocent and upright, and not to engage in Things hazardous and difficult, for fear the Difappointment should be too much for them; and their distracted Mind should put them upon mischievous and wicked Refolves: One fuch Argugument, I fay, is better, and like to prevail more than twenty very fair and reasonable one's, when the Judgment is perverted, and the Understanding almost lost, and the Man is overwhelmed with Misery, neither inclin'd to ask, nor capable of taking Counsel, when 'tis offer'd him.

And thus, in Cases, where Religious Melancholy is the prevailing Humour, and drives poor People to these sad Extremities; how much easier and safer is it, to secure them at first from taking in such Principles as occasion these disquiet and perplexing Thoughts; than, having taken them in, to secure them against the Power and Instuence of those Thoughts? Can any thing be more reasonable to believe, than that God is the very best of Beings? That he transcends all other Beings, as much in Goodness, as in Power and Wisdom? That that Notion is formed as

foon

foo

Co

Bei

can

tha

to

un

the

no

pr

bu

VC

po

n

C

neir

ind

ffer

es,

ar-

of

ın-

nd

re-

ves

in

if-

nd

if-

u-

ail

's,

r-

1-

a-

7-

r

n

n

foon in our Minds, and enters as much into the Composition of the Deity, as any other? That a Being thus absolutely, and thus necessarily good, can never intend any thing unmerciful or cruel; that it would be cruel and unmerciful for him, to make a Creature, with defign of making it unspeakably miserable; that therefore this neither is, nor can be done by him; that therefore no Man ever was defign'd by God, originally and primarily, to be miserable in the World to come; but only made capable of being fo, by finning voluntarily and deliberately; and, upon that Supposition, of being punish'd, and confequently miserable. But this will shew Men faulty, and God just, in punishing Offenders: That, whereas they think they ground this hard Opinion of God upon the revealed Will in Scripture; they might confider, that if any fuch thing appear'd literally, yet that that could hardly be the Sense of the place, which would destroy our natural Notions of the Godhead (as this Pre-ordination to eternal Mifery would destroy the natural Notions we have of God's Justice and Goodness:) And next to that, might remember, that when Man fell into Sin, and must have perish'd in it, God was fo transcendently merciful, as presently to promise; and in his own due time effected, the fending his only Son into the World, that the World through him might be faved: That this his Son did actually come into the World, and live for our Example and Instruction, and die for our Redemption, and made Satisfaction to God for all the Sins of the World; and, for the Merit of these Sufferings, was advanc'd B b 2

bel

vic

the

mi

to

ou

cie

W

OI

be

ai

vanc'd to God's right Hand in Heaven, and made the Head of the Church; who, before his going up to Heaven, commission'd his Apostles to preach to all the World, and teach them, that if they repented of their Sins, would believe in Jefus Christ, and be baptiz'd in Matter and Form, as he requir'd, and live in Obedience to God's Word, they should certainly be forgiven, and fav'd. That these Invitations and Calls to Faith, to Repentance, and Baptism, and to Rewards upon Conditions, were all of them inconfistent with, and contradictory to all manner of Predestination to Wickedness and Punishment: And that the whole defign of the Gospel is overturn'd by fuch a Scheme of Cruelty, and horrible Injustice; and that such Notions do utterly root out the Love of God from all Men's Hearts, and represent him worse, than one can do his Adverfary; in as much as Revenge is somewhat better, than deliberate, unprovok'd, and undeferv'd Cruelty. 'Tis easier, I say, to perswade People, that God neither has, nor can predestinate any one to Misery; than, when they are once persivaded of fuch Doctrine, to divert them from the Confequences of it, that naturally may, tho' they do not always follow, either Carelefness under the Security of their Predestination to Life, or Despair under the Certainty of being lost for ever. I cannot tell how Men come to be perfwaded to believe fuch hard things of God, who is Goodness it felf, as they never did or could believe of any Man living, though very bad, and their greatest Enemy: But 'tis easy to see, that when they do believe

believe these things, they are capable of no Advice or Comfort, if once they apply them to

themselves, and take the dark side.

ade

ing

to

hat

m, d's

nd

th,

p-

nt

e-

nd

d

1-

t

d

Tell a Man, who labours under the Sense of much and frequently repeated Sin, and is ready to die under God's Displeasure, and is seeking out forbidden Means; tell him, that the Mercies of God, in Fesus Christ, are infinite; and that though his Sins be never fo henious, both for weight and number, yet they will all be pardon'd on Repentance and Amendment, and his Soul be purified by the precious Blood of Christ; and he may turn his Heart to God, repent him of his Sins, and fall from his cruel Resolutions, and become a new Man. But, bid him throw away that Instrument of Death, he has so carefully provided, when he believes he lies under the Sentence of God's Wrath, and feal'd to Death by a Decree that is not to be revers'd; and you do but talk to the Waves of the Sea, or the Winds, that hear as little. I know no Argument that can wrest away the Sword, that such a Perswafion puts into a Man's Hand. And, that fuch hard Opinions have no worfe nor frequenter ill Consequences, is owing all to the Grace and Goodness of God. They are fitted to do more Mischief; but God is still the Governour of all, and loves us better than we do ourselves, or think he does, and prevents us from doing ourselves Mischief, by our reasoning falfly against him, because he sees us ignorant, and not malicious.

The Occasion Abithophel took of destroying himself, led me to consider the Occasions that

B b 3

other

other People take to follow him in that bad Practice. And we may fee, I think, in every one of them, (and as many others, as any one can reckon up) that some unlawful Passion or other is at the Bottom, that, meeting with some heavy Difappointment, gives this naughty Counsel. Pride, that disdains to be controul'd; Self-conceit, that will endure no Preference, fcarce Equality; the Love of unlawful Pleasures, that effeminates the Mind, and makes it unable to bear any Hardship or Calamity; fuch Love of Riches as makes Men fraudulent, or violent Oppressors, and puts them on shameful and unjust Courses, which, being detected, give them unspeakable Confusion both of Face and Heart; fuch Ambition of Honours as puts Men on unlawful Courses to obtain them, or preserve them, and which they wear with Infolence, and use to the Hurt, and not the Defence of their Inferiours; fo that they beget Envy and Malignity in People's Minds, and make them wish for their Fall, and rejoice when it comes: The Sense of which makes these haughty Minds, when fallen, the most abject, pitiful, and poor spirited things that can be; well knowing that they, who have made no Friends in the time of their Authority, will find none when they come to lose it; but be treated with the Scorn, and ill Usage they govern'd others with: For no Man who hath gain'd his Honours honestly, and us'd them moderately, and well, but will find Respect and Safety when he lays them down: And Shame, and Infamy, and Danger belong only to shameful, infamous, and injurious Practices: They who have done no Evil, will ' and ! give you proa

> of t Paff beli We yet pre of an or of th

will

will be afraid of none. Do but live in the Credit and Esteem, that virtuous honest Practices will give, and you will never fly to Death to deliver you from Disgrace and Infamy, from Men's Re-

proaches, and despiteful Usage.

bad

one

rec-

s at Dif-

de, hat

the

ip

en

m e-

of

as

)-

e

d

h

e

I do not, however, affirm, that in all Refolutions of the bad kind we are speaking to, some vicious Paffion is at the bottom: But, in general, it is, I believe, fo: They may proceed, also, from great Weakness of Mind, false Principles, and from Mistakes in Religion; which though they are not Sins, yet produce most sad Effects, and are only to be prevented by thinking as well of God, as they do. of any good Man they know. Nor have I taken any pains to fhew, how little any of these Causes or Occasions can justify or excuse the sad Effects of them; for having shewed you, I hope, before, that this Practice was forbidden of God, and confequently finful, I had no need to prove, that nothing can excuse a downright Sin; but rather warn you, to avoid those dangerous Paths that have, we think, led others to Destruction: For, he who does not look to the Temptation and the Snare, shall, in vain, resolve against the Sin and Danger to which they lead.

Bb 4

e to do specie, all grades

(asta transfer) effectally: And ver

SER-

SERMON III.

II SAMUEL XVII. VERSE 23.

And when Ahithophel saw that his Counsel was not followed, he sadled his Ass, and arose, and gat him home to his House, to his City, and put his Houshold in order, and hang'd himself, and died, and was buried in the Sepulchre of his Father.

Having already (in considering these Words) spoken, in the First place, to the disastrous End Abithophel came to, namely, that he hang'd bimself and died; and shewed how unlawful an Act that was in him, and would be so in any one besides: And, in the Second, to the Occasion of it, namely, because he saw his Counsel was not followed; and shewn from thence, that it is evermore some naughty Passion at the Bottom, meeting some Disappointment, that irritates the Mind to fuch unreasonable and desperate Resolutions, of which we ought to take great care: I am now to go on, and consider, Thirdly, that which was previous to this Fact; He arose, gat him home to his House, to his City, and put his Houshold in order: And, Lastly, what followed, he was buried with his Fathers.

In the Third place then, He arose, gat him kome to his House, to his City, and put his Houshold in order. He could not long endure that Place and Company, where the Scene of his Disgrace lay (as he thought) especially: And yet, if he had reasoned

real had ted Riv

disc at t flig tre

Bu be let

ju al al

> th of

> > h tl F

2

,

ot

at

is

d,

reasoned right, he had found, that the longer he had tarried there, the more he had been respected; the more destructive and unreasonable his Rival's Advice had appear'd; and every Hour had discovered how wife and necessary his own was, at that Juncture: And he had feen Husbai either flighted as a weak Counsellor, or suspected as a treacherous one, and himself again the Oracle. But to be Second is, it feems, with Statesmen, to be no Body; his Rage and Ambition would not let him confider, nor wait for an Event that would justify his Wisdom and Foresight to Absalom, and all the hafty Council of War. But this was not all; his wife Counfel was not only defeated, but that Defeat, he faw, would prove the utter Ruin of Absalom, and all his Party: So that Abithophel's Fear would no more permit him to fay in the Camp secure, than his Ambition would let him fit in the Council-Chamber contented. Upon these Principles, He arose, gat him home to his own House, and sat his Houshold in order. In which Words, there is nothing observable, but that he acted very deliberately: Had he been warn'd of God, that he should shortly die, as King Hezekiah was, he could have done no more, nor otherwife than he here did; He would have rifen, and hasted home, and have set his House in order.

Here is one Man in the World, at least, that seems to have destroyed himself with Deliberation, and without any visible Marks of Distraction. This Thing, we know, seldom or never happens in our own Country: Here, every one is downright mad, that makes away himself by any

manner

manner of means; he could not, else, act so against the Principles of Self-preservation, the Laws of Nature, Revelation, his own Interest and Honour. These are the Arguments, our Pity, rather than our Reason makes upon these sad Occasions; and Pity rather to the Living than the Dead. And should the Laws of the Land take no Cognizance of these Violences, should such a Death have no Consequence with respect to the temporal Estate of the surviving Relations; ten People, I believe, to one, now, would be found to be Self-Murtherers; and the publick Judgment would (were there to be one made) be much the same with that of pri-

vate People.

Is it not manifest, in all Cases besides this one, that People can and do deliberately do themselves the greatest Mischiefs, without any manner of Suspicion of having lost their Reason and Senses, as those Words are, in this Case, understood to fignify? Do not Men daily venture to provoke God's Vengeance, by the most daring Impieties, with as much Understanding and Sobriety, as they shew in any other faultless Action of their Lives? Do they not venture Liberty and Life by a thoufand Villanies, which they commit against each other, every Day, by a Malice most propense and ferious, and with most studied Artifice, although they know that, if discovered, they shall surely pay down their Heads for what they do? Do not Men, by Riots and Excess of every kind, hazard their Health and Life almost every Day they live, altho' they fee the Mischief that will follow unavoidably, not at distance, but in view before them?

Is

Is M

he v

Just

Vice

zard

in t

the

loss

ing

tha

are

is t

ma

pre

be

W

W

le

fo

de

tl

R

nst

of

ur.

ur

ty ld

fe

e-

1e

e,

id

e

i-

Is Man so wife and so considerate a Creature, that he will not knowingly, and resolutely defy the Justice of God and Man, and all the Effects of Vice and Wickedness, and most audaciously hazard Soul and Body, Health and Reputation, both in this World, and that to come? And do we fay these People are distracted, and excuse them by loss of Reason and Understanding? I am not saying hereby, that Self-Murtherers are no more mad than all these other desperately wicked People are: But I fay, that to conclude a Self-Murtherer is therefore mad, because he acts so like a Madman, against Nature, Reason, Religion, and Selfprefervation, is not a right Way of concluding; because, by the same Rule, all the enormously wicked ones of the World might be judg'd mad, with as much Reason as the others, since, doubtlefly, they act as much against all Principles of Reafon, and Self-fecurity, as they. And yet the World does not conclude these wicked People mad; they think it is not quite fo well with them; their Reafon, Senfe, and Understanding make them accountable to God and Man, and will most certainly condemn them.

The People, who truly want their Sense and Understanding, do indeed often fall into Mischief, and often do great Violence to themselves; but, generally speaking, they seek not Mischief as their End, but fall into it accidentally, as blind Men do into a Pit: They do not make it their Design, nor pitch upon the Means that are most sure and proper to effect such Purpose; one may commonly see some notable Failure in their Projects:

But

But in these forts of Violence there is a fixt Defign, an End most stedfastly pursued; and Means most suitable and proper pitch'd upon, and renewed with a most obstinate Resolution and Firmness, again and again, upon a Disappointment; there is hardly any Action of their Life carried on with more Contrivance, than that which is to put an End to it: And if the Design were right, they would be counted rather cunning Men, than mad or fenfeless; so that 'tis plain these People make their Judgment from the Event only, which is doubtless very wrong: For though the End be never fo naught, unreasonable and wicked; yet a Man is not therefore mad when he chooses it, but naught, unreasonable, and wicked. A Man, indeed, is in some sense mad, when he is under the Dominion of any of his Passions, and out of the Government of Reason: But because a Man's Reafon is given him by God, to govern himself withal, and to keep his Passions in good order; therefore Men do not excuse the mischievous Effects of any of these Passions, by saying the Man was mad. And when one Man kills another with equal Deliberation, with as much Preparation and Contrivance, as some Men shew in dispatching themfelves; he is not commonly acquitted by making it Man-slaughter, but found guilty of Murther: And there can be no reason for this, but that in Self-Murther no Body else receives Damage, for whom the Jury might be concern'd; which shews they rather consider the Mischief that is done, than the State and Disposition of Mind with which it is done.

Neither

who

not

it is

mu

dift

and

fees

this

rate

to t

jus

be

jus

fo

ex

co

'ti

W

H

th

to

ins re-

m-

t;

on

ut

ey ad

ke

is

oe

a

it

nne

le

1-

-

Neither do I, by this, intend to fay, that they who commit these Violences on themselves, are not depriv'd of their Sense and Reason; but that it is not always fo: It were indeed to be wish'd much rather, that all Self-Murtherers were truly distracted, than that any should be so with Reason and Sense entire and found. But all the World fees the contrary; there's many of them go about this Bufiness as regularly, leifurely, and deliberately, as Ahithophel here did, They rife, get them to their own home, and fet their Housbold in order, just as he did; they resolve on it a good while, before they pursue it steadily; they sometimes justify this Practice, and defend it by Principles; fo that, upon fome preffing Calamity, one may expect fuch an Issue from them before it actually comes to pass: And yet, when it comes to pass, 'tis all one; it is as if they had been fuddenly feiz'd with Frenzy, and they had been distracted but an Hour before: The Jury and the Coroners see nothing but the fad Event, and, in Commiseration to the furviving Relations, if any thing be to be fav'd to them, declare them distracted; and, no Man but a mad Man would destroy himself, is all that is faid to justify such a Sentence. Which is what is by no means true, and what they know the contrary to, in almost every single Case but this. And in this they are, as I faid, only mifguided by their Pity; they spare the Dead, to do some Kindness to the Living; and fince no Body elfe but the Relations fuffer by fuch a Violence, they shall suffer no more than they needs must, by the natural Consequences of such a Loss. Too

Too much Pity cannot, indeed, be shewn to those who are made so miserable by these violent Deaths: But who can tell but that less Pity would be needful, if less Pity were shewn, on such Occafions? The strictest Discipline, in Camps, is attended with fewer Executions than if it were more remiss: And a severe exacting Justice, in Execution of the Laws, prevents abundance of Offences in the Civil State. And there are fewer Duels in France than England, altho' the Country is, without compare, much larger, and the Humours of that People much more volatile, and eafy to be mov'd than ours: And this, for a Reason very obvious, and reproachful to us, namely, that few or none are ever pardon'd; but Justice is there as blind and relentless, as the Rage of Men, that makes work for her, is here. Who can tell, but a feverer Sentence past upon Self-Murtherers, would make fewer of them? And the utter Ruin of some few Fatherless and Widows, prevent a great many more from being Fatherless and Widows? The Laws of almost all wife Nations, have had that in their Eye, in enacting Penalties: They have punish'd Wife and Children, and undone whole Families, for the Offence of a fingle Person, the Head of them, not for want of knowing how innocent they were, but with Intention of restraining those Heads within the Bounds of Duty, for fear of hazarding and hurting those who were so innocent, and whom they lov'd, and were oblig'd to love, and to fecure from Want, and Shame, and Mifery, and make as happy as they could: Following herein the Example of God himself, Who will vifit; wish Gen not

ful

me fee ing tha trac

Inf

or

W fee fro the not sho for and will The

La wi

to

ftr

di

visit, he says, the Children to the third and fourth Generation of them who hate him; i.e. who keep not that Commandment of abhorring Idols, with no other purpose, than to keep the Fathers faithful to his Service.

to

nt

ld

a-

d-

e-

nc

in

in

h-

of

oe

b-

or

as

at

ut

s,

in

i-

ve

ey

ne

11,

W

n-

01

fo

d

id

17-

ill

It were therefore to be wish'd, that an Experiment of this kind were now and then made, to see if it might not be more useful to the preventing these Missortunes, than the merciful Courses that are now generally taken, to bring in all Distracted, and so absolve them all from any legal Suffering, and punishing neither the Dead with Insamy, nor the Living with any Loss of Estate or Goods.

The Confideration of diffracing and undoing Wife, and Children, and Family, is intended, we fee, by the Laws, to restrain the Fathers of Houses from offending, who would be more at liberty, if they themselves were only concern'd, and were not to involve those near Relations in Ruin: Why should not this have its Influence also, to prevent fome Self-Murthers, if the utter undoing of Wife and Children (as far as Lofs of all temporal Estate will do it) were fure to follow fuch a Violence? The Laws intend it should; and 'tis reasonable to hope some good Effects would follow, if such Laws were duly executed. And can any one tell, whether they, who will always shew Mercy, when Justice is due, do not encourage those Misfortunes by their Pity, and make Men easier to deftroy themselves, because they see it will have no worse Consequence to their Relations, than if they died a natural Death? These things are surely of iome

fome Confideration. And if some Examples were wifely made, they might deter a great many rash

and wicked Enterprizes of this Nature.

And so might also the Consideration of what I am about to fay, under the fourth and last Head, concerning what followed this wicked Fact of Ahithophel; and that is, that he was buried in the Sepulchre of his Father. Josephus says indeed, (Dc. B. J. l.3. c. 14.) that if any amongst the Jews kill themselves, it is decreed, that till the Sun go down, they shall be unburied. This does not appear any where in the Law of Moses; and the Example of Abithophel, in the Text, is against it; for he, we fee, was buried, and that in the Sepulchre of his Father: So that this Decree was made in After-times, by Civil Authority, and it reached no farther than not burying by Day-light; as if Self-Murther were to be accounted a Deed of Darkness, and treated accordingly.

Among the Greeks, Aristotle says, it was generally receiv'd, that the dead Bodies of Self-Murtherers should be disgraced some way or other; and they could find no other way to do it, than by denying them Burial. So when an unaccountable Frenzy had seized the Milesian Maids, and they hang'd themselves in great numbers, the Magistrates knew not how to repress, and put a stop to this growing mad Humour, but by ordering them to be carried out to Burial naked, with the Cords about their Necks, which they had us'd to that bad purpose: And the Sense of this Dishonour had, by good Fortune, the intended Effect; for the rest were so mov'd at the shameful Specta-

cle, t

der a

kind

thefe

Difte

rial,

we n

light

loft;

of A

Con

Shan

in w

tice'

laid

to t

the

or is

the

is, y

whi

of t

fons

by i

Mu

nor

fore

oth

and

and

in l

T

cle,

cle, that they fell into their old Sobriety and Order again, and made no more Attempts of that kind: And yet Gellius says, from Plutarch, that these poor Creatures were under the power of a Distemper; but the Fear of such an infamous Burial, brought them to their Senses again: And so we may observe, I think, that in most of these light Distractions, the Reason is not so entirely lost; but that the Parties are capable of some fort of Arguments, and restrain'd by some particular Considerations, and Motives, of Love, or Fear, or

Shame, or Honour.

re

fh

I

d.

i-

e-

c.

es

50

p-

le

1-

le

d

n

- p s e

The Christians also have thought fit (to shew in what degree of Abhorrence they had this Practice) to deny them Christian Burial, who have laid violent Hands upon themselves; and (not to trouble myself, or you, with what hath been the Practice heretofore of the ancient Christians, or is now of other Churches) it is directed fo, in the first Rubric, before our Burial-Service; which is, you know, confirm'd by Act of Parliament; by which it becomes a Law of the Land, as well as They are there rank'd with Perof the Church. fons Unbaptiz'd, and fuch as die Excommunicated; by which we may conclude, the reckons not Self-Murtherers among the Number of the Faithful; nor accounts them to be true Christians, and therefore cannot have that Hope of them, as she has of other Believers, who die in the Faith of Christ, and with Repentance, (for ought that appears;) and therefore cannot fay the fame Things of them in her publick Prayers.

those

As Ju

accor

but a

This.

prop

thele

Forn

men

thou

Fur

Mu

trar

acco

of I

fay

len

in f

are

fuc

15

M

no

if

bi

V

il

thole

And as the Church denies them Christian Burial, so the Civil Government did heretofore appoint they should be put into the Earth, and lest there with a lasting Mark of Infamy; They were to have a Stake driven through them, which was not to be removed.

not to be remov'd. But notwithstanding both these Penalties, intended both by Church and State, to deter all others from the like unnatural and wicked Attempts, by these Difgraces and Dishonours done to the Dead, they are now buried as other good Christians are, because they are brought in Distracted: And if it be indeed so, there is no Reason why either the Civil Power should mark them with any Infamy, or why the Church should not have good Hope of them, who, tho' unfortunate, are yet as much in God's Favour, as those who are visited with any other Distemper, and happen to die, (as many do) without their Reason, and Senses. No Body can, with any Reason, conclude ought to the Prejudice of People that are truly distracted; for they are not Masters of themselves, nor consequently accountable for what they do, or omit to do: For Revelation being the Rule by which they are to walk, with respect to God, and Reason being the Faculty or Power by which they are to apply that Rule, their Rule must needs be unapplied, by their Defect of Reason. Now if the Civil Power has placed it in the hands of a Jury, to determine whether fuch a Self-Murther were distracted or no, and made them the proper Judges; I do not fee but that as the State does, to must the Church acquiesce in such a Judgment as

those legally impowered Men think fit to give. As Judges themselves give Sentence, not always according to their private Perswasion or Belief, but according to the publick Verdict of the Jury. This, I fay, the rather, because it is, perhaps, the proper Justification of the Clergy, when any of thele Self-Murtherers are buried according to They are directed by the publick Judgment, and not by their private Opinion: For, should a Man be accidentally found dead, and the Fury should think fit to bring him in guilty of Self-Murther, the Minister, tho' he believed the contrary never fo firmly, must not yet bury that Man according to Form; because the Law is his Rule of Acting, and not his private Belief. The Law fays, that Self-Murtherers, or those who lay violent Hands upon themselves, shall not be buried in such a manner; but the Law does not say, who are Self-Murtherers, but leaves that to fuch and fuch particular People; the Minister of the Law is therefore, in this point, to know who are Self-Murtherers, from their Mouth, not from his own, nor yet from the Opinion of the Publick. if a Minister may not bury the Dead, which are brought inguilty of Self-Murther, tho'he believe verily they died a natural Death, only because the Law fays, Self-Murtherers shall not be so buried; how should he be obliged to refuse burying the Dead, which are by Law brought in diftracted, altho' he may well suspect they died by Violence, and with Deliberation? i.e. Why should not the Law be his Rule in one Cafe, as well as it is in the other? If the Scruple be, that the Ru-Cc 2

Bue apl left

were was

inall Atlone

Diffon em

not ite,

nd de

ly

0,

y d y

e

fters

justi

rity

in d

for

Dec

wei

fiaff

cau

exe

Yo

up

tig M

to

to

th

an

th

fil

bric does not determine whether these People be distracted or not, in their Senses, or out of them: But only whether they laid violent Hands on themfelves, or no? The Answer is, That a violent Death is oppos'd to a natural one, which is not chosen, but unavoidable; but People may be poison'd through Ignorance and Mistake; and they may fall from a Precipice; and they may shoot themfelves accidentally; and the Event is the fame as if they had chosen these Deaths, but not the Fault; and there must be some, who are to judge whether they were voluntary or cafual. And it is not to be prefum'd the Church would condemn fuch as died these Deaths, tho'violent, yet accidentally, nor deny them the Favour of her Christian Offices; the must therefore trust some People to judge, whether these People died voluntarily or cafually, and her private Ministers must be determin'd by this Judgment: And fince true Diffraction is as innocent and blameless, as any other Ignorance or Mistake can be, she will no more deny her Christian Offices to one, than to the other: And therefore if a Christian, truly distracted, lay violent Hands upon himself, she may as well hope well of him, as of one who died a violent Death, by Poison, falling from a Precipice, or accidental Shot, and confequently bury him in Form, as she does, I think, the other. And in this Case she trusts the same People with judging and determining, who they are that lay violent Hands upon themselves, that the Civil Power trusts; and she acts according to their Judgment, and not according to the private Judgment of her feveral Minifters,

sters, Ecclesiastical or Civil. This, I think, will justify the Clergy, from contracting any Irregularity, by burying in Form those who are brought in diffracted, as well as it will the Civil Officers, for not feizing on the Estate and Esfects of the Deceased, which are forfeited by Law, if they were not distracted; altho' both Civil and Ecclefiaftical Ministers may be perswaded that the Parties deceased were indeed Self-Murtherers; because the Laws do not trust them to judge, but to execute according to the Judgment of other People. You see, then, that the whole Matter devolves upon the Jury; and therefore, if the constant Mitigation of the Rigours of the Law against Self-Murtherers, be any manner of Encouragement to fall into that Practice, it will behave the Jury to consider well, whether the favourable Verdict they generally bring in, be always fo righteous and so seasonable as they imagine: Whether, since the Wisdom of the Laws intends, that the Confiscation of Estates, the Undoing a Family, the shameful Burial she appoints, and the Denial of Christian Offices, shall deter Men from these horrible Attempts, the Mercy that defeats all these Intentions fo constantly, be not more likely to continue on, than to repress these cruel Violences. This is what I faid will deferve to be better considered, than it commonly is: For such is the natural Affection a Man bears to his Wife and Children, Family and Dependents; fuch is the Respect he has to his own Fame, fuch the Kindness he bears even to his own dead Body, that were he fure his Estate would be forfeited, and his Essects carried Cc 3 from

eath ofen, on'd may

le be

iem:

e as ult; thenot

em-

uch enian to

or er-

gny

ny De

1-

e n

9

fer

an

an

OU

m

bo

is

fended

from his Family; were he fure he should be buried in the Highway, and with a Stake driven through him as a Mark of huge Infamy, and fure he should not be buried like a Christian, with those last Offices, perhaps he would give way to calmer Counfels, and he content to bear his Shame, or Pain, or Lofs, till God faw fit to put an end to all his Sufferings by natural Means. And therefore an Instance or two of such Severity as is legal, well and wisely chosen, might prove a greater Preservative against these Violences, than such a constant and expected Mercy, as we always find, on these Occasions: For Men have now no Fear of Laws; and when they have laid afide the Fear of God, they go about this Business with great Readiness, they are fure of favour in this World, and they will venture the other.

And if it be thought, that the Men who will venture God's Displeasure, will be little mov'd with any lesser Consideration of this Life, every Day's Experience may convince us of the contrary, and shew us, that God is offended much more cheaply, and eafily, than any Neighbour we have, and that we really value his Anger, and his Threat nings less, than the least legal Penalties: However, it were good to try, now and then, whether the Execution of the Laws made to deter Men from Self-Murther, would not have better Effect, than the Courses that are generally taken, we see, have. And the Examples should be made (if one might choose) of some such as have lived very riotoufly and loofely, and spent almost all their Substance, and such as have justified and debu-

ven

ure

ofe

ner

10

all

ore

rell

er-

int

ele

US;

od, fs,

ey

ill 'd

ry

y,

re e,

t-

ve-

25

er n,

e

d

fended, in their Lives, the like Practice in other People, maintaining it by Principles. The riotous and loofe Livers would deferve this Ufage best, and they would find the least Pity from the serious Part of Mankind; and fuch a Punishment might be a Check to others, and keep them within bounds, and make them better Husbands, which is a Thing of more consequence than People imagine, Frugality being the Parent of many Virtues, and a Restraint to many Vices and Enormities. And if they, who have been known to justify these Practices by Principles, whilft they lived, were fure to be made Examples above others; it might help to restrain others from taking such Liberties in Discourse, and from encouraging, thereby, those who would not, it may be, be so forward, without those bad Instructors. Such People will best deferve to be difgraced, and treated with all Rigour, because they do not only do this Wickedness themselves, but endeavour to propagate their destructive Principles, and fuch would meet with leaft Compassion; which thing is always to be heeded in making Examples.

There will be room enough for Pity, and a tender Regard, to such whose unhappy Constitution, Make, and Frame, wrong Education; false and mistaken Principles; with great Weakness both of Body and Mind; long and continued Pains, and dreadful and amazing Calamities, have driven to these Extremities. If Laws and Rules are ever to be broken, it were for such whose Miseries intitle them to all the World's Pity, and who have liv'd a regular, a sober, virtuous, nay, and a religious

Cc 4

Life.

ta

th

CE

10

Life. There, one has room to think, these violent Deaths might proceed from incurable Melancholy, and true Distraction; and not from sudden, desperate, and impious Resolutions, which are usually the Fruits of a Life pass'd in luxurious, vicious and ungodly Courses; when at last Men find themselves overtaken with dreadful Poverty, or fee the Infamy and Ruin that has long been owing to them, come upon them with a Force that is not to be withflood by fuch as have abus'd their Reason, and neglected all Religion. And, indeed, without Religion, both Reason and Virtue will be found deficient, under these Temptations, if Reafon and Virtue ever can be found without Religion. Take away the Belief of God, and the Life of the Soul, and of Rewards and Punishments in the other World, and the Miseries of Humane Life may fometimes be so pressing, that all the Confiderations this World can afford, will hardly make it tolerable. But when a Man confiders himself to be a Creature of God's making, and subject to his Laws and Government by all the Reason in the World, and to the common Dispensations of his Providence, and consequently not at liberty to withdraw himself from the Service appointed to him; and tied, moreover, by Command, and, if a Christian, by voluntary Undertaking, to submit to the Will of God, in all Conditions of Life; to accept the Evil with the Good, to be thankful for the one, and to improve under the other, by making good use of it: When he considers this, and that there is also a Life to come, where it will be impossible to fly from God (tho'

e

d

F

(tho'we should do it here) and that the Miseries, our Disobedience and Impatience here would entail upon us, are in no fort to be compared with those which we escape by Death (which, tho'exceeding sharp, are yet not capable of being very long) when these, and such like Considerations, as Religion will supply the Mind with, come to Men's Affistance in their Streights, they will, with the Grace of God, vanquish the strongest Temptations to these Violences. We must, therefore, oppose the Will and Command of God, to the Desires of present Ease we have, in our Distress, and the future Mischiefs of his Displeasure, to the present ones we labour under, whether of Fear, or Pain, or Shame. And we shall then see, to whether fide 'tis fittest to incline; whether the short Affiictions which are, here, as it were, but for a a Moment, may be compared with the Wrath of God, which abideth for ever. In a word, unless the Mind be fortified with Arguments of Religion, and Considerations of the other Life, our natural Fortitude and Patience will yield to many violent Temptations, that befet Men, in this Vale of Misery. And therefore, few Attempts of this bad kind are made, till either Religion is wholly mastered, and its Impressions quite esfaced, or Men are so misguided, as to think these Mischiess may be done, and Religion (as not concern'd) be safe notwithstanding. But 'tis more consistent with Reason to lay aside all Religion, and disbelieve the whole, than, allowing the Justice of God, and the Life of the World to come, to think these Self-Murtherers are not to account severely for the Violences Violences they have offer'd to themselves, if they are not indeed (what they are commonly reputed) quite lost to Reason, and distracted; of which God will judge much better than we can do.

As for those unhappy People, who lying under the dreadful Apprehension of God's Anger, accounting themselves Vessels of Wrath, and fitted for Destruction; and not being able to live under the Torment of that Thought, put an end to their miserable Lives; as they are most to be pitied whilst alive, so there seems to be the greatest Reafon for sparing them when dead, fince nothing in the World can look so like Distraction as that Distemperature of Brain, which makes them reason and act fo strangely: For if they are, indeed, Veffels of Wrath; Is this the Way to give them any Ease? If they believe themselves consign'd to Pain and Mifery in the other World, what do they get by throwing themselves into that Place of Torment before their time? This is to die for fear of Death, and indeed a great deal worse.

When condemn'd Criminals prevent their legal Punishment by dispatching themselves, they think they save themselves the Shame of dying publickly by infamous Hands: Vain Imagination that I But what can these poor People propose to themselves, by falling into the Hands of the living God a great deal sooner than (even according to their own Fears) they need to do, if they would live as long as God would let them? Can anything be liker Madness than this, under such Perswasion? But such Perswasion is, itself, the maddest that a

Christian

fo

to

to

n

re

Christian can be fill'd with. These People are, very frequently, very good People; or if they have been Sinners, they have long repented, and amended: 'Tis the Sense of their Guilt that lies fo heavy on them; they would give all the World to be forgiven; they believe in God, and in Jesus Christ, the Resurrection, Life everlasting, and the World to come: They believe that Christ died to fave Sinners: They do not know one Sinner in the World, besides themselves, for whom they do not think that Christ died, if that Sinner would repent, and believe the Gospel. Is it not near to Madness, to believe that Christ died for such as repent, and believe the Gospel, and yet to distrust he died for me, who am so forry for my Sins, that I would give the World (if it were mine) I never had committed them? And would not, for any earthly thing, commit the like again? And would purchase the Favour of God with my Blood, and who am quite oppress'd with the Dread of his Displeasure? If this be not repenting and believing, no one can fay what is; and yet this is the Case of many of these unhappy People. Nothing therefore can be liker, or nearer to Distraction, than fo to believe, and fo to repent, as both to forrow and amend, and yet conclude themselves Vefsels of Wrath, and under God's Displeasure: For nothing is so contrary to all Sense and Reason, and the whole Tenor of the Gospel, as to believe that God is not reconciled to all penitent Believers in Jesus Christ; and, without this, Christianity would fall to the Ground. These People, therefore, shut their Eyes to all the Light that can be opened on them;

them; and, by making fuch Conclusions as must be false, if Christianity be true, are not only miferable, but give such Marks of a wrong Turn in their Head, that to conclude they are near Diftraction, is not only charitable, but reasonable. These Things I have been led to say, in considering the Case of Self-Murther, which, from the whole, will appear not only a huge Misfortune; but, also, where Men have their Sense and Reafon, a great and crying Sin; and which, according to the Gospel-Covenant, excludes our Hope, by cutting off Repentance, upon which'tis grounded. If there be any room for Charity, it is, that though all we fee is wrong, yet we may not fee all that truly is in the Condition of these poor People; but God does, and he is infinitely merciful, and doubtless will consider, with his usual Goodness, all that can possibly deserve his Pity and Forgiveness. And tho' he is just, yet is his Justice tempered with fuch Mercy, that even the most provoking Sinner may defire, with David, rather to fall into the Hands of God than Man.

FINIS.



nuft minin Difole. lerthe ne; eardpe, ndlee eotice noft ber